

Collins

BESTSELLING BILINGUAL DICTIONARIES

easy learning

Spanish Grammar

Digital Edition

Collins
Spanish
Grammar

HarperCollins Publishers

Westerhill Road

Bishopbriggs

Glasgow

G64 2QT

Great Britain

Second Edition 2011

Reprint 12 11 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1 0

© HarperCollins Publishers 2004, 2011

EPUB Edition © July 2011 ISBN 978-0-00-744473-1

Collins® is a registered trademark of HarperCollins Publishers Limited

www.collinslanguage.com

A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

Typeset by Davidson Publishing Solutions, Glasgow

Printed in India by Gopsons Papers Ltd

Acknowledgements

We would like to thank those authors and publishers who kindly gave permission for copyright material to be used in the Collins Word Web. We would also like to thank Times Newspapers Ltd for providing valuable data.

“All rights reserved under International and Pan-American Copyright Conventions. By payment of the required fees, you have been granted the non-exclusive, non-transferable right to access and read the text of this e-book on screen. No part of this text may be reproduced, transmitted, downloaded, decompiled, reverse engineered, or stored in or introduced into any information storage and retrieval system, in any form or by any means, whether electronic or mechanical, now known or hereinafter invented, without the express written permission of HarperCollins.”

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the prior permission of the publisher. This book is sold subject to the conditions that it shall not, by way of trade or otherwise, be lent, re-sold, hired out or otherwise circulated without the publisher's prior consent in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published and without a similar condition including this condition being imposed on the subsequent purchaser.

Entered words that we have reason to believe constitute trademarks have been designated as such. However, neither the presence nor absence of such designation should be regarded as affecting the legal status of any trademark.

HarperCollins does not warrant that www.collinsdictionary.com, www.collinslanguage.com or any other website mentioned in this title will be provided uninterrupted, that any website will be error free, that defects will be corrected, or that the website or the server that makes it available are free of viruses or bugs. For full terms and conditions please refer to the site terms provided on the website.

SERIES EDITOR

Rob Scriven

MANAGING EDITOR

Gaëlle Amiot-Cadey

EDITORIAL COORDINATION

Susanne Reichert

Rachel Smith

CONTRIBUTORS

Cordelia Lilly

José María Ruiz Vaca

Fernando León Solís

Wendy Lee

Di Larkin

Jeremy Butterfield

We would like to give special thanks to Di Larkin, Foreign Languages Consultant, and Irene Muir, Faculty Head, Belmont House School, for all their advice on teaching practice in

today's classroom. Their contributions have been invaluable in the writing of this book.

<p>FREE TRIAL Livemocha Active Spanish Powered by Collins <i>Language learning for real life</i></p> <p>Want to see for yourself? Go online to www.livemocha.com/trial and enter this code: J2N8-3JUR-MVM6-HFXW</p> <p><small>Collins and Livemocha reserve the right to withdraw this free trial offer at any time.</small></p> <p> </p>
--

CONTENTS

Foreword for language teachers

Introduction for students

Glossary of grammar terms

Nouns

Using nouns

Gender

Forming plurals

Articles

Different types of article

The definite article: el, la, los and las

The indefinite article: un, una, unos and unas

The article lo

Adjectives

Using adjectives

Making adjectives agree

Word order with adjectives

Comparatives and superlatives of adjectives

Demonstrative adjectives

Interrogative adjectives

Adjectives used in exclamations

Possessive adjectives (1)

Possessive adjectives (2)

Indefinite adjectives

Pronouns

Personal pronouns: subject

Personal pronouns: direct object

Personal pronouns: indirect object

Order of object pronouns

Further information on object pronouns

Pronouns after prepositions

Possessive pronouns

Indefinite pronouns

Relative pronouns

Interrogative pronouns

Demonstrative pronouns

Verbs

Overview of verbs

The present tenses

The present simple tense

ser and estar

The present continuous tense

The imperative

Reflexive verbs

The future tense

The conditional

The preterite

The imperfect tense

The perfect tense

The pluperfect or past perfect tense

The passive

The gerund

Impersonal verbs

The subjunctive

The infinitive

Prepositions after verbs

Verbal Idioms

Negatives

Questions

Asking questions in Spanish

Adverbs

How adverbs are used

How adverbs are formed

Comparatives and superlatives of adverbs

Common adverbs

Position of adverbs

Prepositions

Using prepositions

a, de, en, para and por

Some other common prepositions

Conjunctions

y, o, pero, porque and si

Some other common conjunctions

Split conjunctions

Spelling

Stress

Numbers

Time and date

Main index

Verb tables

Verb index

The alphabet

Note on trademarks

Entered words which we have reason to believe constitute trademarks have been designated as such. However, neither the presence nor the absence of such designation should be regarded as affecting the legal status of any trademark.

FOREWORD FOR LANGUAGE TEACHERS

The *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* is designed to be used with both young and adult learners, as a group reference book to complement your course book during classes, or as a recommended text for self-study and homework/coursework.

The text specifically targets learners from *ab initio* to intermediate or GCSE level, and therefore its structural content and vocabulary have been matched to the relevant specifications up to and including Higher GCSE.

The approach aims to develop knowledge and understanding of grammar and to improve the ability of learners to apply it by:

- defining parts of speech at the start of each major section, with examples in English to clarify concepts
- minimizing the use of grammar terminology and providing clear explanations of terms both within the text and in the **Glossary**
- illustrating points with examples (and their translations) based on topics and contexts which are relevant to beginner and intermediate course content

The text helps you develop positive attitudes to grammar learning in your classes by:

- giving clear, easy-to-follow explanations
- prioritizing content according to relevant specifications for the levels
- sequencing points to reflect course content, e.g. verb tenses

- highlighting useful **Tips** to deal with common difficulties
- summarizing **Key points** at the end of sections to consolidate learning

In addition to fostering success and building a thorough foundation in Spanish grammar, the optional **Grammar Extra** sections will encourage and challenge your learners to further their studies to higher and advanced levels.

INTRODUCTION FOR STUDENTS

Whether you are starting to learn Spanish for the very first time, brushing up on topics you have studied in class, or revising for your GCSE exams, the *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* is here to help. This easy-to-use guide takes you through all the basics you will need to speak and understand modern, everyday Spanish.

Newcomers can sometimes struggle with the technical terms they come across when they start to explore the grammar of a new language. The *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* explains how to get to grips with all the parts of speech you will need to know, using simple language and cutting out jargon.

The text is divided into sections, each dealing with a particular area of grammar. Each section can be studied individually, as numerous cross-references in the text guide you to relevant points in other sections of the book for further information.

Every major section begins with an explanation of the area of grammar covered on the following pages. For quick reference, these definitions are also collected together on pages [viii–xii](#) in a glossary of essential grammar terms.

What is a verb?

A **verb** is a ‘doing’ word which describes what someone or something does, what someone or something is, or what happens to them, for example,

be, sing, live.

Each grammar point in the text is followed by simple examples of real Spanish, complete with English translations, helping you understand the rules. Underlining has been used in examples throughout the text to highlight the grammatical point being explained.

- In orders and instructions telling someone to do something, the pronoun joins onto the end of the verb to form one word.

Ayúdame

Help me.

Acompáñanos.

Come with us.

In Spanish, as with any foreign language, there are certain pitfalls which have to be avoided. **Tips** and **Information** notes throughout the text are useful reminders of the things that often trip learners up.

Tip

Don't forget to use personal **a** before indefinite pronouns referring to people when they are the object of a verb.

¿Viste a alguien?

Did you see anybody?

No vi a nadie.

I didn't see anybody.

Key points sum up all the important facts about a particular area of grammar, to save you time when you are revising and help you focus on the main grammatical points.

Key points

- ✓ Like other adjectives, Spanish indefinite adjectives (such as **otro** and **todo**), must agree with what they describe.
- ✓ They go before the noun to which they relate.

If you think you would like to continue with your Spanish studies to a higher level, check out the **Grammar Extra** sections. These are intended for advanced students who are interested in knowing a little more about the structures they will come across beyond GCSE.

Grammar Extra!

por is often combined with other Spanish prepositions and words, usually to show movement.

Saltó por encima de la mesa. She jumped over the table.

**Nadamos por debajo del
punte.** We swam under the bridge.

**Pasaron por delante de
Correos.**

They went past the post
office.

Finally, the supplement at the end of the book contains **Verb Tables**, where 83 important Spanish verbs (both regular and irregular) are conjugated in full. Examples show you how to use these verbs in your own work. If you are unsure how a verb is conjugated in Spanish, you can look up the **Verb Index** on pages **85–91** to find a cross-reference to a model verb.

We hope that you will enjoy using the *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* and find it useful in the course of your studies.

GLOSSARY OF GRAMMAR TERMS

ABSTRACT NOUN a word used to refer to a quality, idea, feeling or experience, rather than a physical object, for example, *size, reason, happiness*. Compare with **concrete noun**.

ACTIVE a form of the verb that is used when the subject of the verb is the person or thing doing the action, for example, *I wrote a letter*. Compare with **passive**.

ADJECTIVE a 'describing' word that tells you more about a person or thing, such as their appearance, colour, size or other qualities, for example, *pretty, blue, big*.

ADVERB a word usually used with verbs, adjectives or other adverbs that gives more information about when, where, how or in what circumstances something happens or to what degree something is true, for example, *quickly, happily, now, extremely, very*.

AGREE (to) in the case of adjectives and pronouns, to have the correct word ending or form according to whether what is referred to is masculine, feminine, singular or plural; in the case of verbs, to have the form which goes with the person or thing carrying out the action.

APOSTROPHE S an ending ('s) added to a noun to show who or what someone or something belongs to, for example, *Danielle's dog, the doctor's wife, the book's cover*.

ARTICLE a word like *the, a* and *an*, which is used in front of a noun. See also **definite article, indefinite article**.

AUXILIARY VERB a verb such as *be*, *have* or *do* used with a main verb to form tenses and questions.

BASE FORM the form of the verb without any endings added to it, for example, *walk*, *have*, *be*, *go*.

CARDINAL NUMBER a number used in counting, for example, *one*, *seven*, *ninety*. Compare with **ordinal number**.

CLAUSE a group of words containing a verb.

COMPARATIVE an adjective or adverb with *-er* on the end of it or *more* or *less* in front of it that is used to compare people, things or actions, for example, *slower*, *less important*, *more carefully*.

COMPOUND NOUN a word for a living being, thing or idea, which is made up of two or more words, for example, *tin-opener*, *railway station*.

CONCRETE NOUN a word that refers to an object you can touch with your hand, rather than to a quality or idea, for example, *ball*, *map*, *apples*. Compare with **abstract noun**.

CONDITIONAL a verb form used to talk about things that would happen or would be true under certain conditions, for example, *I would help you if I could*. It is also used to say what you would like or need, for example, *Could you give me the bill?*

CONJUGATE (to) to give a verb different endings according to whether you are referring to *I*, *you*, *they* and so on, and according to whether you are referring to the present, past or future, for example, *I have*, *she had*, *they will have*.

CONJUGATION a group of verbs which have the same endings as each other or change according to the same pattern.

CONJUNCTION a word such as *and*, *because* or *but* that links two words or phrases of a similar type or two parts of a sentence, for example, *Diane and I have been friends for years; I left because I was bored.*

CONSONANT a letter that isn't a vowel, for example, *b, f, m, s, v*. Compare with **vowel**.

CONTINUOUS TENSE a verb tense formed using *to be* and the *-ing* form of the main verb, for example, *They're swimming* (present continuous); *He was eating* (past continuous).

DEFINITE ARTICLE the word *the*. Compare with **indefinite article**.

DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVE one of the words *this*, *that*, *these* and *those* used with a noun to refer to particular people or things, for example, *this woman, that dog.*

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN one of the words *this*, *that*, *these* and *those* used instead of a noun to point out people or things, for example, *That looks fun.*

DIRECT OBJECT a noun or pronoun used with verbs to show who or what is acted on by the verb. For example, in *He wrote a letter* and *He wrote me a letter*, *letter* is the direct object. Compare **indirect object**.

DIRECT OBJECT PRONOUN a word such as *me*, *him*, *us* and *them* which is used instead of a noun to stand in for the person or thing directly affected by the action expressed by the verb. Compare with **indirect object pronoun**.

ENDING a form added to a verb, for example, *go* —> *goes*, and to adjectives, nouns and pronouns depending on whether they refer to masculine, feminine, singular or plural things or persons.

EXCLAMATION a word, phrase or sentence that you use to show you are surprised, shocked, angry and so on, for example, *Wow!; How dare you!; What a surprise!*

FEMININE a form of noun, pronoun or adjective that is used to refer to a living being, thing or idea that is not classed as masculine.

FUTURE a verb tense used to talk about something that will happen or will be true.

GENDER whether a noun, pronoun or adjective is feminine or masculine.

GERUND a verb form in English ending in *-ing*, for example, *eating, sleeping*.

IMPERATIVE the form of a verb used when giving orders and instructions, for example, *Shut the door!; Sit down!; Don't go!; Let's eat*.

IMPERFECT one of the verb tenses used to talk about the past, especially in descriptions, and to say what was happening or used to happen, for example, *It was sunny at the weekend; We were living in Spain at the time; I used to walk to school*. Compare to **preterite**.

IMPERSONAL VERB a verb whose subject is *it*, but where the *it* does not refer to any specific thing, for example, *It's raining; It's 10 o'clock*.

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVE one of a small group of adjectives used to talk about people or things in a general way, without saying who or what they are, for example, *several, all, every*.

INDEFINITE ARTICLE the words *a* and *an*. Compare with **definite article**.

INDICATIVE ordinary verb forms that aren't subjunctive, such as the present, preterite or future. Compare with **subjunctive**.

INDEFINITE PRONOUN a small group of pronouns such as *everything*, *nobody* and *something*, which are used to refer to people or things in a general way, without saying exactly who or what they are.

INDIRECT OBJECT a noun or pronoun used with verbs to show who benefits or is harmed by an action. For example, in *I gave the carrot to the rabbit*, *the rabbit* is the indirect object and *the carrot* is the direct object. Compare with **direct object**.

INDIRECT OBJECT PRONOUN a pronoun used with verbs to show who benefits or is harmed by an action. For example, in *I gave him the carrot* and *I gave it to him*, *him* is the indirect object and the *carrot* and *it* are the direct objects. Compare with **direct object pronoun**.

INDIRECT QUESTION a question that is embedded in another question or instruction such as *Can you tell me what time it is?*; *Tell me why you did it*. Also used for reported speech such as *He asked me why I did it*.

INDIRECT SPEECH the words you use to report what someone has said when you aren't using their actual words, for example, *He said that he was going out*. Also called **reported speech**.

INFINITIVE a form of the verb that hasn't any endings added to it and doesn't relate to any particular tense. In English the infinitive is usually shown with *to*, as in *to speak*, *to eat*.

INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVE a question word used with a noun, for example, *What instruments do you play?*; *Which shoes do you like?*

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUN one of the words *who*, *whose*, *whom*, *what* and *which* when they are used instead of a noun to ask questions, for example, *What's that?*; *Who's coming?*

INTransitive verb a type of verb that does not take a direct object, for example, *to sleep, to rise, to swim*. Compare with **transitive verb**.

INVARIABLE used to describe a form which does not change.

IRREGULAR VERB a verb whose forms do not follow a general pattern. Compare with **regular verb**.

MASCULINE a form of noun, pronoun or adjective that is used to refer to a living being, thing or idea that is not classed as feminine.

NEGATIVE a question or statement which contains a word such as *not, never* or *nothing*, and is used to say that something is not happening, is not true or is absent, for example, *I never eat meat; Don't you love me?* Compare with **positive**.

NOUN a 'naming' word for a living being, thing or idea, for example, *woman, desk, happiness, Andrew*.

NOUN GROUP, NOUN PHRASE a word or group of words that acts as the subject or object of a verb, or as the object of a preposition, for example, *my older sister; the man next door; that big house on the corner*.

NUMBER used to say how many things you are referring to or where something comes in a sequence. See also **ordinal number** and **cardinal number**. Also the condition of being singular or plural.

OBJECT a noun or pronoun which refers to a person or thing that is affected by the action described by the verb. Compare with **direct object, indirect object** and **subject**.

OBJECT PRONOUN one of the set of pronouns including *me, him* and *them*, which are used instead of the noun as the object of a verb or preposition. Compare with **subject pronoun**.

ORDINAL NUMBER a number used to indicate where something comes in an order or sequence, for example, *first, fifth, sixteenth*. Compare with **cardinal number**.

PART OF SPEECH a word class, for example, *noun, verb, adjective, preposition, pronoun*.

PASSIVE a form of the verb that is used when the subject of the verb is the person or thing that is affected by the action, for example, *we were told*.

PAST PARTICIPLE a verb form which is used to form perfect and pluperfect tenses and passives, for example, *watched, swum*. Some past participles are also used as adjectives, for example, *a broken watch*.

PAST PERFECT see **pluperfect**.

PERFECT a verb form used to talk about what has or hasn't happened, for example, *I've broken my glasses; We haven't spoken about it*.

PERSON one of the three classes: the first person (*I, we*), the second person (*you* singular and *you* plural), and the third person (*he, she, it* and *they*).

PERSONAL PRONOUN one of the group of words including *I, you* and *they* which are used to refer to you, the people you are talking to, or the people or things you are talking about.

PLUPERFECT one of the verb tenses used to describe something that had happened or had been true at a point in the past, for example, *I had forgotten to finish my homework*. Also called **past perfect**.

PLURAL the form of a word which is used to refer to more than one person or thing. Compare with **singular**.

POSITIVE a positive sentence or instruction is one that does not contain a negative word such as *not*. Compare with **negative**.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVE one of the words *my, your, his, her, its, our* or *their*, used with a noun to show who it belongs to.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUN one of the words *mine, yours, hers, his, ours* or *theirs*, used instead of a noun to show who something belongs to.

PREPOSITION a word such as *at, for, with, into* or *from*, which is usually followed by a noun, pronoun or, in English, a word ending in *-ing*. Prepositions show how people and things relate to the rest of the sentence, for example, *She's at home; a tool for cutting grass; It's from David.*

PRESENT a verb form used to talk about what is true at the moment, what happens regularly, and what is happening now, for example, *I'm a student; I travel to college by train; I'm studying languages.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE a verb form in English ending in *-ing*, for example, *eating, sleeping.*

PRETERITE a verb form used to talk about actions that were completed in the past in Spanish. It often corresponds to the ordinary past tense in English, for example, *I bought a new bike; Mary went to the shops on Friday; I typed two reports yesterday.*

PRONOUN a word which you use instead of a noun, when you do not need or want to name someone or something directly, for example, *it, you, none.*

PROPER NOUN the name of a person, place, organization or thing. Proper nouns are always written with a capital letter, for example, *Kevin, Glasgow, Europe, London Eye.*

QUESTION WORD a word such as *why, where, who, which* or *how* which is used to ask a question.

RADICAL-CHANGING VERBS in Spanish, verbs which change their stem or root in certain tenses and in certain persons.

REFLEXIVE PRONOUN a word ending in *-self* or *-selves*, such as *myself* or *themselves*, which refers back to the subject, for example, *He hurt himself; Take care of yourself.*

REFLEXIVE VERB a verb where the subject and object are the same, and where the action 'reflects back' on the subject. A reflexive verb is used with a reflexive pronoun such as *myself, yourself, herself*, for example, *I washed myself; He shaved himself.*

REGULAR VERB a verb whose forms follow a general pattern or the normal rules. Compare with **irregular verb**.

RELATIVE PRONOUN a word such as *that, who* or *which*, when it is used to link two parts of a sentence together.

REPORTED SPEECH see **indirect speech**.

SENTENCE a group of words which usually has a verb and a subject. In writing, a sentence begins with a capital and ends with a full stop, question mark or exclamation mark.

SIMPLE TENSE a verb tense in which the verb form is made up of one word, rather than being formed from *to have* and a past participle or *to be* and an *-ing* form; for example, *She plays tennis; He wrote a book.*

SINGULAR the form of a word which is used to refer to one person or thing. Compare with **plural**.

STEM the main part of a verb to which endings are added.

SUBJECT a noun or pronoun that refers to the person or thing doing the action or being in the state described by the verb, for example, *My cat doesn't drink milk.* Compare with **object**.

SUBJECT PRONOUN a word such as *I, he, she* and *they* which carries out the action described by the verb. Pronouns stand in for nouns when it is clear who is being talked about, for example, *My brother isn't here at the moment. He'll be back in an hour.* Compare with **object pronoun**.

SUBJUNCTIVE a verb form used in certain circumstances to indicate some sort of feeling, or to show doubt about whether something will happen or whether something is true. It is only used occasionally in modern English, for example, *If I were you, I wouldn't bother; So be it.*

SUPERLATIVE an adjective or adverb with *-est* on the end of it or *most* or *least* in front of it that is used to compare people, things or actions, for example, *thinnest, most quickly, least interesting.*

SYLLABLE consonant + vowel units that make up the sounds of a word, for example, *ca-the-dral (3 syllables), im-po-ssi-ble (4 syllables).*

TENSE the form of a verb which shows whether you are referring to the past, present or future.

TRANSITIVE VERB a type of verb that takes a direct object, for example, *to spend, to raise, to waste.* Compare with **intransitive verb**.

VERB a 'doing' word which describes what someone or something does, is, or what happens to them, for example, *be, sing, live.*

VOWEL one of the letters *a, e, i, o* or *u.* Compare with **consonant**.

NOUNS

What is a noun?

A **noun** is a 'naming' word for a living being, thing or idea, for example, *woman, desk, happiness, Andrew*.

Using nouns

- In Spanish, all nouns are either masculine or feminine. This is called their gender. Even words for things have a gender.
- Whenever you are using a noun, you need to know whether it is masculine or feminine as this affects the form of other words used with it, such as:
 - adjectives that describe it
 - articles (such as **el** or **una**) that go before it
- ⇒ *For more information on **Articles and Adjectives**, see pages [10](#) and [19](#).*
- You can find information about gender by looking the word up in a dictionary. When you come across a new noun, always learn the word for *the* or *a* that goes with it to help you remember its gender.
 - **el** or **un** before a noun usually tells you it is masculine
 - **la** or **una** before a noun tells you it is feminine

- ▶ We refer to something as singular when we are talking about just one of them, and as plural when we are talking about more than one. The singular is the form of the noun you will usually find when you look a noun up in the dictionary. As in English, nouns in Spanish change their form in the plural.
- ▶ Adjectives, articles and pronouns are also affected by whether a noun is singular or plural.

Tip

Remember that you have to use the right word for *the*, *a* and so on according to the gender of the Spanish noun.

Gender

1 Nouns referring to people

- ▶ Most nouns referring to men and boys are masculine.

el hombre the man

el rey the king

- ▶ Most nouns referring to women and girls are feminine.

la mujer the woman

la reina **the queen**

- ▶ When the same word is used to refer to either men/boys or women/girls, its gender usually changes depending on the sex of the person it refers to.

<u>el</u> estudiante	the (male) student
<u>la</u> estudiante	the (female) student
<u>el</u> belga	the Belgian (man)
<u>la</u> belga	the Belgian (woman)

Grammar Extra!

Some words for people have only one possible gender, whether they refer to a male or a female.

<u>la</u>	the (male <i>or</i> female) person
<u>la</u> víctima	the (male <i>or</i> female) victim

- In English, we can sometimes make a word masculine or feminine by changing the ending, for example, *Englishman* and *Englishwoman* or *prince* and *princess*. In Spanish, very often the ending of a noun changes depending on whether it refers to a man or a woman.

<u>el</u> camarero	the waiter
<u>la</u> camarera	the waitress
<u>el</u> empleado	the employee (<i>male</i>)
<u>la</u> empleada	the employee (<i>female</i>)
<u>el</u> in glés	the Englishman
<u>la</u> in glesa	the Englishwoman

Tip

Note that a noun ending in **-o** is usually masculine, and a noun ending in **-a** is usually feminine.

⇒ For more information on **Masculine and feminine forms of words**, see page 5.

2 Nouns referring to animals

- ▶ In English we can choose between words like *bull* or *cow*, depending on the sex of the animal. In Spanish too there are sometimes separate words for male and female animals.

el toro the bull

la vaca the cow

- ▶ Sometimes, the same word with different endings is used for male and female animals.

el perro the (male) dog

la perra the (female) dog, bitch

el gato the (male) cat

la gata the (female) cat

Tip

When you do not know or care what sex the animal is, you can usually use the masculine form as a general

word.

- Words for other animals don't change according to the sex of the animal. Just learn the Spanish word with its gender, which is always the same.

el sapo

the toad

el hámster

the hamster

la cobaya

the guinea pig

la tortuga

the tortoise

3 Nouns referring to things

- In English, we call all things – for example, *table, car, book, apple* – 'it'. In Spanish, however, things are either masculine or feminine. As things don't divide into sexes the way humans and animals do, there are no physical clues to help you with their gender in Spanish. Try to learn the gender as you learn the word.
- There are lots of rules to help you. Certain endings are usually found on masculine nouns, while other endings are usually found on feminine nouns.
- The following ending is usually found on masculine nouns.

Masculine ending	Examples
-o	el libro the book el periódico the newspaper BUT:

	<p><u>la mano</u> the hand</p> <p><u>la foto</u> the photo</p> <p><u>la moto</u> the motorbike</p> <p><u>la radio</u> the radio (<i>although in parts of Latin America, it is <u>el</u> radio</i>)</p>
--	--

► The following types of word are also masculine.

- names of the days of the week and the months of the year

Te veré el lunes. I'll see you on Monday.

- the names of languages

el inglés English

el español Spanish

Estudio el español. I'm studying Spanish.

- the names of rivers, mountains and seas

el Ebro the Ebro

el Everest Everest

el Atlántico the Atlantic

► The following endings are usually found on feminine nouns.

Feminine ending	Examples
-a	<u>la casa</u> the house

	<p><u>la cara</u> the face</p> <p>BUT:</p> <p><u>el día</u> the day</p> <p><u>el mapa</u> the map</p> <p><u>el planeta</u> the planet</p> <p><u>el tranvía</u> the tram</p> <p>and many words ending in -ma (<u>el problema</u> the problem, <u>el programa</u> the programme, <u>el sistema</u> the system, <u>el clima</u> the climate)</p>
-ción sión	<p><u>la lección</u> the lesson</p> <p><u>la estación</u> the station</p> <p><u>la expresión</u> the expression</p>
-dad tad tud	<p><u>la ciudad</u> the city</p> <p><u>la libertad</u> freedom</p> <p><u>la multitud</u> the crowd</p>

Grammar Extra!

Some words have different meanings depending on whether they are masculine or feminine.

Masculine	Meaning	Feminine	Meaning
<u>el capital</u>	the capital (meaning <i>money</i>)	<u>la capital</u>	the capital (meaning <i>city</i>)
<u>el cometa</u>	the comet	<u>la</u>	the kite

		cometa	
el cura	the priest	la cura	the cure
el guía	the guide (<i>man</i>)	la guía	the guidebook; the guide (<i>woman</i>)

Invirtieron mucho capital. They invested a lot of capital.

Viven en la capital. They live in the capital.

4 Masculine and feminine forms of words

- Like English, Spanish sometimes has very different words for males and females.

el hombre	the man
la mujer	the woman
el rey	the king
la reina	the queen

- Many Spanish words can be used to talk about men or women simply by changing the ending. For example, if the word for the male ends in **-o**, you can almost always make it feminine by changing the **-o** to **-a**.

el amigo	the (male) friend
la amiga	the (female) friend
el hermano	the brother
la hermana	the sister
el empleado	the (male) employee

la empleada the (female) employee

el viudo the widower

la viuda the widow

- ☑ Note that some words referring to people end in **-a** in the masculine as well as in the feminine. Only the article (**el** or **la**, **un** or **una**) can tell you what gender the noun is.

el dentista the (male) dentist

la dentista the (female) dentist

el deportista the sportsman

la deportista the sportswoman

- Many masculine nouns ending in a consonant (any letter other than a vowel) become feminine by adding an **-a**.

el español the Spanish man

la española the Spanish woman

el profesor the (male) teacher

la profesora the (female) teacher

Tip

If the last vowel of the masculine word has an accent, this is dropped in the feminine form.

un inglés an Englishman

una inglesa an Englishwoman

un francés

a Frenchman

una francesa

a Frenchwoman

⇒ For more information about **Spelling** and **Stress**, see pages 196 and 200.

Key points

- ✓ The ending of a Spanish word often helps you work out its gender: for instance, if a word ends in **-o**, it is probably masculine; if it ends in **-a**, it is probably feminine.
- ✓ These endings generally mean that the noun is feminine: **-ción, -sión, -dad, -tad, -tud**
- ✓ Days of the week and months of the year are masculine. So are languages, mountains and seas.
- ✓ You can change the ending of some nouns from **-o** to **-a** to make a masculine noun feminine.

Forming plurals

1 Plurals ending in -s and -es

- In English we usually make nouns plural by adding an -s to the end (*garden* ' *gardens*; *house* → *houses*), although we do have some nouns which are irregular and do not follow this pattern (*mouse* ' *mice*; *child* ' *children*).

Tip

Remember that you have to use **los** (for masculine nouns) or **las** (for feminine nouns) with plural nouns in Spanish. Any adjective that goes with the noun also has to agree with it, as does any pronoun that replaces it.

⇒ For more information on **Articles, Adjectives and Pronouns**, see pages **10, 19 and 41**.

- To form the plural in Spanish, add **-s** to most nouns ending in a vowel (*a, e, i, o or u*) which doesn't have an accent.

el libro	the book
<u>los libros</u>	the books
el hombre	the man
<u>los hombres</u>	the men
la profesora	the (female) teacher
<u>las profesoras</u>	the (female) teachers

- Add **-es** to singular nouns ending in a consonant (any letter other than a vowel).

el profesor	the (male) teacher
<u>los profesores</u>	the (male/male and female) teachers
la ciudad	the town/city
<u>las ciudades</u>	the towns/cities

- ☑ Note that some foreign words (that is, words which have come from another language, such as English) ending in a consonant just add **-s**.

el jersey

the jersey

los jerseys

the jerseys

- Words ending in **-s** which have an unstressed final vowel do not change in the plural.

el paraguas

the umbrella

los paraguas

the umbrellas

el lunes

(on) Monday

los lunes

(on) Mondays

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page **200**.

- Some singular nouns ending in an accented vowel add **-es** in the plural while other very common ones add **-s**.

el jabalí

the boar

los jabalíes

the boars

el café

coffee/the café

los cafés

coffees/the cafés

el sofá

the sofa

los sofás

the sofas

When nouns are made up of two separate words, they are called compound nouns, for example, **el abrelatas** (meaning *the tin-opener*) and **el hombre rana** (meaning *the frogman*). Some of these nouns don't change in the plural, for example, **los abrelatas**, while others do, for example, **los hombres rana**. It is always best to check in a dictionary to see what the plural is.

2 Spelling changes with plurals ending in -es

- Singular nouns which end in an accented vowel and either **-n** or **-s** drop the accent in the plural.

la canción	the song
las canciones	the songs
el autobús	the bus
los autobuses	the buses

- Singular nouns of more than one syllable which end in **-en** and don't already have an accent, add one in the plural.

el examen	the exam
los exámenes	the exams
el joven	the youth
los jóvenes	young people

- Singular nouns ending in **-z** change to **-c** in the plural.

la luz	the light
las luces	the lights

la vez the times

las veces the times

⇒ For further information on **Spelling and Stress**, see pages **196** and **200**.

3 Plural versus singular

► A few words relating to clothing that are plural in English can be singular in Spanish.

una braga (a pair of) knickers

un slip (a pair of) underpants

un pantalón (a pair of) trousers

► A few common words behave differently in Spanish from the way they behave in English.

un mueble a piece of furniture

unos muebles some furniture

una noticia a piece of news

unas noticias some news

un consejo a piece of advice

unos consejos some advice

Key points

- ✓ Add **-s** to form the plural of a noun ending in an unaccented vowel.

- ✓ Add **-es** to form the plural of most nouns ending in a consonant.
- ✓ Drop the accent when adding plural **-es** to nouns ending in an accented vowel + **-n or -s**.
- ✓ Add an accent when adding plural **-es** to words of more than one syllable ending in **-en**.
- ✓ Change **-z** to **-c** when forming the plural of words like **luz**.
- ✓ A few common words are plural in English but not in Spanish.

ARTICLES

What is an article?

In English, an **article** is one of the words *the*, *a*, and *an* which is given in front of a noun.

Different types of article

► There are two types of article:

- the definite article: *the* in English. This is used to identify a particular thing or person.

I'm going to the supermarket.
That's the woman I was talking to.

- the indefinite article: *a* or *an* in English, whose plural is *some* or *any* (or no word at all). This is used to refer to something unspecific, or that you do not really know about.

Is there a supermarket near here?
I need a day off.

The definite article: **el**, **la**, **los** and **las**

1 The basic rules

- In English, there is only one definite article: *the*. In Spanish, you have to choose between four definite articles: **el**, **la**, **los** and **las**. Which one you choose depends on the noun which follows.

- › In Spanish, all nouns (including words for things) are either masculine or feminine – this is called their gender. And just as in English, they can also be either singular or plural. You must bear this in mind when deciding which Spanish word to use for *the*.

⇨ *For more information on **Nouns**, see page 1.*

- › **el** is used before masculine singular nouns.

el niño the boy

el periódico the newspaper

- › **la** is used before feminine singular nouns.

la niña the girl

la revista the magazine

Tip

To help you produce correct Spanish, always learn the article or the gender together with the noun when learning words.

- › **los** and **las** are used before plural nouns. **los** is used with masculine plural words, and **las** is used with feminine plural words.

los niños the boys

las niñas the girls

los periódicos the newspapers

las revistas

the magazines

- ☑ Note that you use **el** instead of **la** immediately before a feminine singular word beginning with **a** or **ha** when the stress falls on the beginning of the word. This is because **la** sounds wrong before the ‘a’ sound and the use of **el** does not affect the feminine gender of the noun. But if you add an adjective in front of the noun, you use **la** instead, since the two ‘a’ sounds do not come next to each other.

el agua limpia

the clean water

el hacha

the axe

la misma agua

the same water

la mejor hacha

the best axe

2 a and de with the definite article

- If **a** is followed by **el**, the two words become **al**.

al cine

to the cinema

al empleado

to the employee

al hospital

to the hospital

Vio al camarero.

He saw the waiter.

- If **de** is followed by **el**, the two words become **del**.

del departamento

of/from the department

del autor

of/from the author

del presidente

of/from the president

3 Using the definite article

- ▶ **el, la, los** and **las** are often used in Spanish in the same way as *the* is used in English. However, there are some cases where the article is used in Spanish but not in English.
- ▶ The definite article is used in Spanish:
 - when talking about people, animals and things in a general way

Me gustan los animales.

I like animals.

Están subiendo los precios.

Prices are going up.

Me gusta el chocolate.

I like chocolate.

No me gusta el café.

I don't like coffee.

El azúcar es dulce.

Sugar is sweet.

- when talking about abstract qualities, for example, *time, hope, darkness, violence*

El tiempo es oro.

Time is money.

Admiro la sinceridad en la gente.

I admire honesty in people.

- ☑ Note that the definite article is NOT used in certain set phrases consisting of **tener** and a noun or after certain prepositions.

tener hambre to be hungry (*literally: to have hunger*)

sin duda no doubt (*literally: without doubt*)

con cuidado carefully (*literally: with care*)

⇒ For more information on **Prepositions**, see page **178**.

- when talking about colours

El azul es mi color favorito. Blue is my favourite colour.

- when talking about parts of the body – you do not use *my, your, his* and so on as you would in English

Tiene los ojos verdes. He's got green eyes.

No puedo mover las piernas. I can't move my legs.

- ☑ Note that possession is often shown by a personal pronoun in Spanish.

La cabeza me da vueltas. My head is spinning.

Lávate las manos. Wash your hands.

⇒ For more information on *Personal pronouns*, see page 42.

- when using someone's title – for example, *Doctor, Mr* – but talking about someone rather than to them.

El doctor Vidal no está. Dr Vidal isn't here.

El señor Pelayo vive aquí. Mr Pelayo lives here.

- when talking about institutions, such as school or church

en el colegio at school

en la universidad at university

en la iglesia at church

en el hospital in hospital

en la cárcel

in prison

- when talking about meals, games or sports

La cena es a las nueve.

Dinner is at nine o'clock.

Me gusta el tenis.

I like tennis.

No me gusta el ajedrez.

I don't like chess.

- when talking about days of the week and dates, where we use the preposition *on* in English

Te veo el lunes.

I'll see you on Monday.

Los lunes tenemos muchos deberes.

We have a lot of homework on Mondays.

Nací el 17 de marzo.

I was born on 17 March.

- when talking about the time

Es la una.

It's one o'clock.

Son las tres.

It's three o'clock.

Son las cuatro y media.

It's half past four.

- when talking about prices and rates

Cuesta dos euros el kilo.

It costs two euros a kilo.

20 euros la hora

20 euros an hour

Key points

- ✓ Before masculine singular nouns → use **el**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns → use **la**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns starting with stressed **a** or **ha** → use **el**.
- ✓ Before masculine plural nouns → use **los**.
- ✓ Before feminine plural nouns → use **las**.
- ✓ **a** + **el** → **al**
- ✓ **de** + **el** → **del**
- ✓ There are some important cases when you would use a definite article in Spanish when you wouldn't in English; for example, when talking about:
 - things in a general way
 - abstract qualities
 - colours
 - parts of the body
 - someone with a title in front of their name
 - institutions
 - meals, games or sports
 - the time, days of the week and dates (*using the preposition on in English*)
 - prices and rates

The indefinite article: **un**, **una**, **unos** and **unas**

1 The basic rules

- ▶ In English, the indefinite article is *a*, which changes to *an* when it comes before a vowel or a vowel sound, for example, *an apple*. In the plural, we use *some* or *any*.
- ▶ In Spanish, you have to choose between four indefinite articles: **un**, **una**, **unos** and **unas**. Which one you choose depends on the noun that follows.
- ▶ In Spanish, all nouns (including words for things) are either masculine or feminine – this is called their gender. And, just as in English, they can also be either singular or plural. You must bear this in mind when deciding which Spanish word to use for *a*.

⇒ For more information on **Nouns**, see page 1.

- ▶ **un** is used before masculine singular nouns.

un niño a boy

un periódico a newspaper

- ▶ **una** is used before feminine singular nouns.

una niña a girl

una revista a magazine

- ▶ **unos** is used before masculine plural nouns.

unos niños some boys

unos periódicos some newspapers

► **unas** is used before feminine plural nouns.

unas niñas

some girls

unas revistas

some magazines

☑ Note that you use **un** instead of **una** immediately before a feminine singular word beginning with **a** or **ha** when the stress falls on the beginning of the word. This is because **una** sounds wrong before the 'a' sound.

un ave

a bird

2 Using the indefinite article

► The indefinite article is often used in Spanish in the same way as it is in English. However, there are some cases where the article is not used in Spanish but is in English, and vice versa.

► The indefinite article is NOT used in Spanish:

- when you say what someone's job is

Es profesor.

He's a teacher.

Mi madre es enfermera.

My mother is a nurse.

- after **tener**, **buscar**, or **llevar (puesto)** when you are only likely *to have, be looking for* or *be wearing* one of the items in question

No tengo coche.

I haven't got a car.

¿Llevaba sombrero?

Was he wearing a hat?

☑ Note that when you use an adjective to describe the noun, you DO use an article in Spanish too.

Es un buen médico. He's a good doctor.
Tiene una novia española. He has a Spanish girlfriend.
Busca un piso pequeño. He's looking for a little flat.

- The indefinite article is NOT used in Spanish with the words **otro**, **cierto**, **cien**, **mil**, **sin**, and **qué**.

otro libro another book
cierta calle a certain street
cien soldados a hundred soldiers
mil años a thousand years
sin casa without a house
¡Qué sorpresa! What a surprise!

- The indefinite article IS used in Spanish but NOT in English when an abstract noun, such as **inteligencia** (meaning *intelligence*) or **tiempo** (meaning *time*) has an adjective with it.

Posee una gran He possesses great
inteligencia. intelligence.

Key points

- ✓ Before masculine singular nouns → use **un**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns → use **una**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns starting with stressed **a** or **ha** → use **un**.

- ✓ Before masculine plural nouns → use **unos**.
- ✓ Before feminine plural nouns → use **unas**.
- ✓ You do not use an indefinite article in Spanish for saying what someone's job is.
- ✓ You do not use an indefinite article in Spanish with the words **otro**, **cierto**, **cien**, **mil**, **sin**, and **qué**.

The article **lo**

- Unlike the other Spanish articles, and articles in English, **lo** is NOT used with a noun.
- **lo** can be used with a masculine singular adjective or past participle (the **-ado** and **-ido** forms of regular verbs) to form a noun.

<u>Lo único</u> que no me gusta ...	The only thing I don't like ...
Esto es <u>lo importante</u>.	That's the important thing.
<u>Lo bueno</u> de eso es que ...	The good thing about it is that ...
...	
Sentimos mucho <u>lo ocurrido</u>.	We are very sorry about what happened.

⇒ For more information on the **Past participle**, see page [115](#).

- **lo** is also used in a number of very common phrases:

- **a lo mejor** maybe, perhaps
A lo mejor ha salido. Perhaps he's gone out.
- **por lo menos** at least
- **Hubo por lo menos cincuenta heridos.** At least fifty people were injured.
- **por lo general** generally
- **Por lo general me acuesto temprano.** I generally go to bed early.

► **lo** can also be used with **que** to make **lo que** (meaning *what*).

- Vi lo que pasó.** I saw what happened.
- Lo que más me gusta es nadar.** What I like best is swimming.

Grammar Extra!

lo can be used with **de** followed by a noun phrase to refer back to something the speaker and listener both know about.

- Lo de tu hermano me preocupa mucho.** I'm very worried about that business with your brother.
- Lo de ayer es mejor que lo olvides.** It would be best to forget what happened yesterday.

lo can be used with an adjective followed by **que** to emphasize how big/small/beautiful and so on something is or was. The adjective

must agree with the noun it describes.

No sabíamos lo pequeña que era la casa. We didn't know how small the house was.

No te imaginas lo simpáticos que son. You can't imagine how nice they are.

lo can also be used in a similar way with an adverb followed by **que**.

Sé lo mucho que te gusta la música. I know how much you like music.

Key points

- ✓ **lo** is classed as an article in Spanish, but is not used with nouns.
- ✓ You can use **lo** with a masculine adjective or past participle to form a noun.
- ✓ You also use **lo** in a number of common phrases.
- ✓ **lo que** can be used to mean *what* in English.

ADJECTIVES

What is an adjective?

An **adjective** is a ‘describing’ word that tells you more about a person or thing, such as their appearance, colour, size or other qualities, for example, *pretty*, *blue*, *big*.

Using adjectives

- ▶ Adjectives are words like *clever*, *expensive* and *silly* that tell you more about a noun (a living being, thing or idea). They can also tell you more about a pronoun, such as *he* or *they*. Adjectives are sometimes called ‘describing words’. They can be used right next to a noun they are describing, or can be separated from the noun by a verb like *be*, *look*, *feel* and so on.

a clever girl
an expensive coat
a silly idea
He’s just being silly.

⇒ For more information on **Nouns and Pronouns**, see pages [1](#) and [41](#).

- ▶ In English, the only time an adjective changes its form is when you are making a comparison.

She’s cleverer than her brother.
That’s the silliest idea I’ve ever heard!

- In Spanish, however, most adjectives agree with what they are describing. This means that their endings change depending on whether the person or thing you are referring to is masculine or feminine, singular or plural.

un chico <u>rubio</u>	a fair boy
una chica <u>rubia</u>	a fair girl
unos chicos <u>rubios</u>	some fair boys
unas chicas <u>rubias</u>	some fair girls

- In English, adjectives come BEFORE the noun they describe, but in Spanish you usually put them AFTER it.

una casa <u>blanca</u>	a <u>white</u> house
-------------------------------	----------------------

⇒ For more information on **Word order with adjectives**, see page 24.

Making adjectives agree

1 Forming feminine adjectives

- The form of the adjective shown in dictionaries is generally the masculine singular form. This means that you need to know how to change its form to make it agree with the person or thing it is describing.
- Adjectives ending in **-o** in the masculine change to **-a** for the feminine.

mi hermano <u>pequeño</u>	my little brother
mi hermana <u>pequeña</u>	my little sister

- ▶ Adjectives ending in any vowel other than **-o** (that is: *a, e, i* or *u*) or ending in a vowel with an accent on it do **NOT** change for the feminine.

el vestido <u>verde</u>	the green dress
la blusa <u>verde</u>	the green blouse
un pantalón <u>caqui</u>	some khaki trousers
una camisa <u>caqui</u>	a khaki shirt
un médico <u>iraquí</u>	an Iraqi doctor
una familia <u>iraquí</u>	an Iraqi family

- ▶ Adjectives ending in a consonant (any letter other than a vowel) do **not** change for the feminine except in the following cases:
 - Adjectives of nationality or place ending in a consonant add **-a** for the feminine. If there is an accent on the final vowel in the masculine, they lose this in the feminine.

un periódico <u>inglés</u>	an English newspaper
una revista <u>inglesa</u>	an English magazine
el equipo <u>francés</u>	the French team
la cocina <u>francesa</u>	French cooking
el vino <u>español</u>	Spanish wine
la lengua <u>española</u>	the Spanish language

- ☑ Note that these adjectives do not start with a capital letter in Spanish.

- Adjectives ending in **-or** in the masculine usually change to **-ora** for the feminine.

un niño encantador a charming little boy

una niña encantadora a charming little girl

☑ Note that a few adjectives ending in **-or** used in comparisons – such as **mejor** (meaning *better, best*), **peor** (meaning *worse, worst*), **mayor** (meaning *older, bigger*), **superior** (meaning *upper, top*), **inferior** (meaning *lower, inferior*) as well as **exterior** (meaning *outside, foreign*) and **posterior** (meaning *rear*) do not change in the feminine.

- Adjectives ending in **-án, -ón** and **-ín** in the masculine change to **-ana, -ona** and **-ina** (without an accent) in the feminine.

un gesto burlón a mocking gesture

una sonrisa burlona a mocking smile

un hombre parlanchín a chatty man

una mujer parlanchina a chatty woman

- Adjectives ending in a consonant but which do not fall into the above categories do not change in the feminine.

un chico joven a young boy

una chica joven a young girl

un final feliz a happy ending

una infancia feliz a happy childhood

2 Forming plural adjectives

- Adjectives ending in an unaccented vowel (*a, e, i, o* or *u*) in the singular add **-s** in the plural.

el <u>último</u> tren	the last train
los <u>últimos</u> trenes	the last trains
una casa <u>vieja</u>	an old house
unas casas <u>viejas</u>	some old houses
una chica muy <u>habladora</u>	a very chatty girl
unas chicas muy <u>habladoras</u>	some very chatty girls
una pintora <u>francesa</u>	a French (woman) painter
unas pintoras <u>francesas</u>	some French (women) painters
una mesa <u>verde</u>	a green table
unas mesas <u>verdes</u>	some green tables

- Adjectives ending in a consonant in the masculine or feminine singular add **-es** in the plural. If there is an accent on the final syllable in the singular, they lose it in the plural.

un chico muy <u>hablador</u>	a very chatty boy
unos chicos muy <u>habladores</u>	some very chatty boys
un pintor <u>francés</u>	a French painter
unos pintores <u>franceses</u>	some French painters
un examen <u>fácil</u>	an easy exam
unos exámenes <u>fáciles</u>	some easy exams
la tendencia <u>actual</u>	the current trend
las tendencias <u>actuales</u>	the current trends

- **-z** at the end of a singular adjective changes to **-ces** in the plural.

un día feliz

a happy day

unos días felices

happy days

Tip

When an adjective describes a mixture of both masculine and feminine nouns, use the masculine plural form of the adjective.

**El pan y la fruta son
baratos.**

Bread and fruit are
cheap.

Grammar Extra!

Adjectives ending in an accented vowel in the singular add **-es** in the plural.

un médico iraní

an Iranian doctor

unos médicos iraníes

some Iranian doctors

3 Invariable adjectives

- A small number of adjectives do not change in the feminine or plural. They are called invariable because their form NEVER changes, no matter what they are describing. These adjectives are often made up of more than one word – for example **azul marino** (meaning *navy blue*) – or come from the names of things – for example **naranja** (meaning *orange*).

las chaquetas **azul marino**

navy-blue jackets

los vestidos **naranja**

orange dresses

4 Short forms for adjectives

- The following adjectives drop the final **-o** before a masculine singular noun.

bueno	→	buen	→	un buen libro	a good book
malo	→	mal	→	mal tiempo	bad weather
alguno	→	algún	→	algún libro	some book
ninguno	→	ningún	→	ningún hombre	no man
uno	→	un	→	un día	one day
primero	→	primer	→	el primer hijo	the first child
tercero	→	tercer	→	el tercer hijo	the third child

- ☑ Note that the adjectives **alguno** and **ninguno** add accents when they are shortened to become **algún** and **ningún**.

- **grande** (meaning *big, great*) is shortened to **gran** before a singular noun.

un gran actor

a great actor

una gran sorpresa

a big surprise

- **ciento** (meaning *a hundred*) changes to **cien** before all plural nouns as well as before **mil** (meaning *thousand*) and **millones** (meaning *millions*).

cien años

a hundred years

cien millones

a hundred million

cien mil euros

a hundred thousand euros

- ☑ Note that you use the form **ciento** before other numbers.

ciento tres

one hundred and three

⇒ For more information on **Numbers**, see page [206](#).

Grammar Extra!

► **cualquiera** drops the final **a** before any noun.

cualquier día

any day

a cualquier hora

any time

Key points

- ✓ Most Spanish adjectives change their form according to whether the person or thing they are describing is masculine or feminine, singular or plural.
- ✓ In Spanish, adjectives usually go after the noun they describe.
- ✓ Don't forget to make adjectives agree with the person or thing they describe – they change for the feminine and plural forms:

un chico español

una chica española

unos chicos españoles

unas chicas españolas

- ✓ Some adjectives never change their form.
- ✓ Some adjectives drop the final **-o** before a masculine singular noun.
- ✓ **grande** and **ciento** also change before certain nouns.

Word order with adjectives

- When adjectives are used right beside the noun they are describing, they go before it in English. Spanish adjectives usually go AFTER the noun.

una corbata azul

a blue tie

una palabra española

a Spanish word

la página siguiente

the following page

la hora exacta

the precise time

- When you have two or more adjectives after the noun, you use **y** (meaning *and*) between the last two.

un hombre alto y delgado

a tall, slim man

- A number of types of Spanish adjectives go BEFORE the noun:

- demonstrative adjectives

este sombrero

this hat

- possessive adjectives (**mi**, **tu**, **su** and so on)

mi padre

my father

- numbers

tres días

three days

- interrogative adjectives

¿qué hombre?

which man?

- adjectives used in exclamations

¡Qué lástima!

What a pity!

- indefinite adjectives

cada día

every day

- shortened adjectives

mal tiempo

bad weather

- Some adjectives can go both BEFORE and AFTER the noun, but their meaning changes depending on where they go.

Adjective	Before Noun	Examples	After Noun	Examples
antiguo	former	un antiguo colega a former colleague	old, ancient	la historia antigua ancient history
diferente	various	diferentes idiomas various languages	different	personas diferentes different people
grande	great	un gran pintor a great painter	big	una casa grande a big house
medio	half	medio melón half a melon	average	la nota media the average mark
mismo	same	la misma respuesta the same answer	self, very, precisely	yo mismo myself eso mismo precisely that
nuevo	new	mi nuevo coche my new car (= <i>new to me</i>)	brand new	unos zapatos nuevos some (brand) new shoes
pobre	poor (= <i>wretched</i>)	esa pobre mujer that poor woman	poor (= <i>not rich</i>)	un país pobre a poor country
viejo	old (= <i>long-standing</i>)	un viejo amigo an old friend	old (= <i>aged</i>)	esas toallas viejas those old towels

Key points

- ✓ Most Spanish adjectives go after the noun.
- ✓ Certain types of adjectives in Spanish go before the noun.
- ✓ Some adjectives can go before or after the noun – the meaning changes according to the position in the sentence.

Comparatives and superlatives of adjectives

1 Making comparisons using comparative adjectives

What is a comparative adjective?

A **comparative adjective** in English is one with *-er* on the end of it or *more* or *less* in front of it, that is used to compare people or things, for example, *cleverer*, *less important*, *more beautiful*.

-
- In Spanish, to say something is *cheaper*, *more expensive* and so on, you use **más** (meaning *more*) before the adjective.

Esta bicicleta es **más barata**. This bicycle is cheaper.

La verde es **más cara**. The green one is more expensive.

- To say something is *less expensive*, *less beautiful* and so on, you use **menos** (meaning *less*) before the adjective.

La verde es **menos cara**. The green one is less expensive.

- To introduce the person or thing you are making the comparison with, use **que** (meaning *than*).

Es **más alto que mi hermano**. He's taller than my brother.

La otra bicicleta es **más cara que ésta**. The other bicycle is more expensive than this one.

Esta bicicleta es **menos cara que la otra**. This bicycle is less expensive than the other one.

Grammar Extra!

When *than* in English is followed by a verbal construction, use **de lo que** rather than **que** alone.

Está **más cansada de lo que** She is more tired than she

parece.

seems.

2 Making comparisons using superlative adjectives

What is a superlative adjective?

A **superlative adjective** in English is one with *-est* on the end of it or *most* or *least* in front of it, that is used to compare people or things, for example, *thinnest*, *most beautiful*, *least interesting*.

- In Spanish, to say something is *the cheapest*, *the most expensive* and so on, you use **el/la/los/las** (+ noun) + **más** + adjective.

el caballo más viejo

the oldest horse

la casa más pequeña

the smallest house

los hoteles más baratos

the cheapest hotels

las manzanas más caras

the most expensive apples

¿Quién es el más alto?

Who's the tallest?

- To say something is *the least expensive*, *the least intelligent* and so on, you use **el/la/los/las** (+ noun) + **menos** + adjective.

el hombre menos

the least likeable man

simpático

la niña menos habladora

the least talkative girl

los cuadros menos bonitos

the least attractive paintings

las empleadas menos

the least hardworking (female)

trabajadoras

employees

¿Quién es el menos
trabajador?

Who's the least hardworking?

Tip

In phrases like *the cleverest girl in the school* and *the tallest man in the world*, you use **de** to translate *in*.

el hombre más alto del the tallest man in the
mundo world

3 Irregular comparatives and superlatives

- Just as English has some irregular comparative and superlative forms – *better* instead of ‘*more good*’, and *worst* instead of ‘*most bad*’ – Spanish also has a few irregular forms.

Adjective	Meaning	Comparative	Meaning	Superlative	Meaning
bueno	good	mejor	better	el mejor	the best
malo	bad	peor	worse	el peor	the worst
grande	big	mayor	older	el mayor	the oldest
pequeño	small	menor	younger	el menor	the youngest

Éste es mejor que el
otro.

This one is better than the other
one.

Es el mejor de todos.

It's the best of the lot.

Hoy me siento peor.

I feel worse today.

la peor alumna de la
clase

the worst student in the class

- ☑ Note that **mejor**, **peor**, **mayor** and **menor** don't change their endings in the feminine. In the plural, they become **mejores**, **peores**, **mayores** and **menores**. Don't forget to use **el**, **la**, **los** or **las** as appropriate, depending on whether the person or thing described is masculine or feminine, singular or plural.

Tip

más grande and **más pequeño** are used mainly to talk about the actual size of something.

Este plato es más grande que aquél. This plate is bigger than that one.

Mi casa es más pequeña que la tuya. My house is smaller than yours.

mayor and **menor** are used mainly to talk about age.

mis hermanos mayores my older brothers

la hija menor the youngest daughter

4 Other ways of making comparisons

- To say *as ... as* (for example, *as pretty as*, *not as pretty as*) you use **tan ... como** in Spanish.

Pedro es tan alto como Miguel. Pedro is as tall as Miguel.

No es **tan guapa como** su madre.

She isn't as pretty as her mother.

No es **tan grande como** yo creía.

It isn't as big as I thought.

Grammar Extra!

You use **tanto** with a noun rather than **tan** with an adjective in some expressions. This is because in Spanish you would use a noun where in English we would use an adjective.

Pablo tiene **tanto miedo como** yo.

Pablo is as frightened as I am.

Yo no tengo **tanta hambre como** tú.

I'm not as hungry as you are.

► To make an adjective stronger, you can use **muy** (meaning *very*).

Este libro es muy interesante. This book is very interesting.

Grammar Extra!

For even more emphasis, you can add **-ísimo** (meaning *really, extremely*) to the end of an adjective. Take off the final vowel if the adjective already ends in one. For example, **delgado** (meaning *thin*) becomes **delgadísimo** (meaning *really thin*).

Se ha comprado un coche He's bought himself a really

carísimo.

expensive car.

Está **delgadísima**.

She's looking really thin.

If you add **-ísimo**, you need to take off any other accent. For example, **fácil** (meaning *easy*) becomes **facilísimo** (meaning *extremely easy*) and **rápido** (meaning *fast*) becomes **rapidísimo** (meaning *extremely fast*).

Es **facilísimo** de hacer.

It's really easy to make.

un coche **rapidísimo**

an extremely fast car

When the adjective ends in **-co**, **-go** or **-z**, spelling changes are required to keep the same sound. For example, **rico** (meaning *rich*) becomes **riquísimo** (meaning *extremely rich*) and **feroz** (meaning *fierce*) becomes **ferocísimo** (meaning *extremely fierce*).

Se hizo **riquísimo**.

He became extremely rich.

un tigre **ferocísimo**

an extremely fierce tiger

⇒ For more information on **Spelling and Stress**, see pages **196** and **200**.

Key points

- ✓ Comparative adjectives in Spanish are formed by:
 - **más** + adjective + **que**
 - **menos** + adjective + **que**
- ✓ Superlative adjectives in Spanish are formed by:

- **el/la/los/las** + **más** + adjective
- **el/la/los/las** + **menos** + adjective

- ✓ There are a few irregular comparative and superlative forms in Spanish.
- ✓ You can use **tan ... como** to say *as ... as*.
- ✓ To make an adjective stronger, use **muy**.

Demonstrative adjectives

What is a demonstrative adjective?

A **demonstrative adjective** is one of the words *this*, *that*, *these* and *those* used with a noun in English to point out a particular thing or person, for example, *this woman*, *that dog*.

1 Using demonstrative adjectives

- Just as in English, Spanish demonstrative adjectives go **BEFORE** the noun. Like other adjectives in Spanish, they have to change for the feminine and plural forms.

	Masculine	Feminine	Meaning
Singular	este	esta	this
	ese	esa	that (<i>close by</i>)
	aquel	aquella	that (<i>further away</i>)
Plural	estos	estas	these
	esos	esas	those (<i>close by</i>)
	aquellos	aquellas	those (<i>further away</i>)

- Use **este/esta/estos/estas** (meaning *this/these*) to talk about things and people that are near you.

Este bolígrafo no escribe. This pen isn't working.

Me he comprado estos libros. I've bought myself these books.

- Use **ese/esa/esos/esas** and **aquel/aquella/aquellos/aquellas** (meaning *that/those*) to talk about things that are further away.

Esa revista es muy mala. That magazine is very bad.

¿Conoces a esos señores? Do you know those men?

No le gusta aquella muñeca. She doesn't like that doll.

Siga usted hasta aquellos árboles. Carry on until you reach those trees (over there).

2 **ese or aquel ?**

- In English we use *that* and *those* to talk about anything that is not close by, but in Spanish you need to be a bit more precise.

- Use **ese/esa/esos/esas**:

- to talk about things and people that are nearer to the person you are talking to than to you

ese papel en el que escribes that paper you're writing on

¿Por qué te has puesto esas medias? Why are you wearing those tights?

- to talk about things and people that aren't very far away

No me gustan esos cuadros. I don't like those pictures.

- Use **aquel/aquella/aquellos/aquellas** to talk about things that are further away.

Me gusta más aquella mesa. I prefer that table (over there).

Grammar Extra!

You should use **ese/esa/esos/esas** when you are talking about a definite date, month or year.

¿1999? No me acuerdo de dónde pasamos las vacaciones ese año. 1999? I can't remember where we went on holiday that year.

You should use **aquel/aquella/aquellos/aquellas** when you are talking about something in the past and not mentioning a definite date.

aquellas vacaciones que pasamos en Francia that holiday we had in France

Key points

✓ **this** + noun = **este/esta** + noun

✓ **these** + noun = **estos/estas** + noun

- ✓ that + noun = **ese/esa** + noun (*when the object is not far away from you or the person you're talking to*)
- ✓ that + noun = **aquel/aquella** + noun (*when the object is more distant*)
- ✓ those + noun = **esos/esas** + noun (*when the objects are not far away from you or the person you're talking to*)
- ✓ those + noun = **aquellos/aquellas** + noun (*when the objects are more distant*)

Interrogative adjectives

What is an interrogative adjective?

An **interrogative adjective** is one of the question words and expressions used with a noun such as *which*, *what*, *how much* and *how many*; for example, *Which shirt are you going to wear?*; *How much time have we got?*

- In Spanish the interrogative adjectives are **qué** (meaning *which* or *what*) and **cuánto/cuánta/cuántos/cuántas** (meaning *how much/how many*). Note that like all other Spanish question words, **qué** and **cuánto** have accents on them.
- **¿qué?** (meaning *which?* or *what?*) doesn't change for the feminine and plural forms.

¿Qué libro te gusta más?

Which book do you like best?

¿Qué clase de diccionario necesitas? What kind of dictionary do you need?

¿Qué instrumentos tocas? What instruments do you play?

¿Qué ofertas has recibido? What offers have you received?

- **¿ cuánto?** means the same as *how much?* in English. It changes to **¿ cuánta?** in the feminine form.

¿Cuánto dinero te queda? How much money have you got left?

¿Cuánta lluvia ha caído? How much rain have we had?

- ☑ Note that with **gente** (meaning *people*), which is a feminine singular noun, **cuánta** must be used.

¿Cuánta gente ha venido? How many people came?

- **¿ cuántos?** means the same as *how many?* in English. It changes to **¿ cuántas?** in the feminine plural.

¿Cuántos bolígrafos quieres? How many pens would you like?

¿Cuántas personas van a venir? How many people are coming?

Tip

Don't forget to add the opening upside-down question mark in Spanish questions.

Grammar Extra!

In English we can say, *Tell me what time it is*, *He asked me how much sugar there was* and *I don't know which dress to choose* to express doubt, report a question, or ask a question in a roundabout or indirect way. In Spanish you can use **qué** and **cuánto/cuánta/cuántos/cuántas** in the same way.

Dime <u>qué</u> hora es.	Tell me what time it is.
Me preguntó <u>cuánto</u> azúcar había.	He asked me how much sugar there was.
No sé <u>qué</u> vestido escoger.	I don't know which dress to choose.
No sé a <u>qué</u> hora llegó.	I don't know what time she arrived.
Dime <u>cuántas</u> postales quieres.	Tell me how many postcards you'd like.

Adjectives used in exclamations

- In Spanish **¡qué...!** is often used where we might say *What a ...!* in English.

¡Qué lástima!

What a pity!

¡Qué sorpresa!

What a surprise!

Tip

Don't forget to add the opening upside-down exclamation mark in Spanish exclamations.

Grammar Extra!

¡qué...! combines with **tan** or **más** and an adjective in Spanish to mean *What (a)...!* in English.

¡Qué día tan or más bonito!

What a lovely day!

¡Qué tiempo tan or más malo!

What awful weather!

¡Qué pasteles tan or más ricos!

What delicious cakes!

In Spanish **cuánto/cuánta/cuántos/cuántas** can be used to mean *What a lot of ...!* in English.

¡Cuánto dinero!

What a lot of money!

¡Cuánta gente!

What a lot of people!

¡Cuántos autobuses!

What a lot of buses!

¡Cuánto tiempo!

What a long time!

Possessive adjectives (1)

What is a possessive adjective?

In English a **possessive adjective** is one of the words *my, your, his, her, its, our* or *their* used with a noun to show that one person or thing belongs to another.

- Like other adjectives in Spanish, possessive adjectives have to change for the feminine and plural forms.

Singular		Plural		Meaning
masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine	
mi	mi	mis	mis	my
tu	tu	tus	tus	your (belonging to someone you address as <i>tú</i>)
su	su	sus	sus	his; her; its; your (belonging to someone you address as <i>usted</i>)
nuestro	nuestra	nuestros	nuestras	our
vuestro	vuestra	vuestros	vuestras	your (belonging to people you address as <i>vosotros/vosotras</i>)
su	su	sus	sus	their; your (belonging to people you address as <i>ustedes</i>)

- ⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

¿Dónde está tu hermana? Where's your sister?

José ha perdido su cartera. José has lost his wallet.

¿Dónde están nuestros pasaportes? Where are our passports?

¿Por qué no traéis a vuestros hijos? Why don't you bring your children?

Mis tíos están vendiendo su casa. My uncle and aunt are selling their house.

Tip

Possessive adjectives agree with what they describe NOT with the person who owns that thing.

Pablo ha perdido su bolígrafo. Pablo has lost his pen.

Pablo ha perdido sus bolígrafos. Pablo has lost his pens.

- ☑ Note that possessive adjectives aren't normally used with parts of the body. You usually use the definite article instead.

Tiene los ojos verdes. He's got green eyes.

No puedo mover las piernas. I can't move my legs.

⇒ For more information on **Articles**, see page 10.

Tip

As **su** and **sus** can mean *his, her, its, your* or *their*, it can sometimes be a bit confusing. When you need to avoid confusion, you can say the Spanish equivalent of *of him* and so on.

su → la casa de his house

casa él (*literally: the*

house of him)

sus → **los amigos** your friends
amigos de usted (*literally: the friends of you*)

sus → **los coches** their cars
coches de ellos (*literally: the cars of them*)

su → **el abrigo** her coat
abrigo de ella (*literally: the coat of her*)

⇒ For more information on **Personal pronouns**, see page 42.

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish possessive adjectives are:
 - **mi/tu/su/nuestro/vuestro/su** with a masculine singular noun
 - **mi/tu/su/nuestra/vuestra/su** with a feminine singular noun

- **mis/tus/sus/nuestros/vuestros/sus** with a masculine plural noun
- **mis/tus/sus/nuestras/vuestras/sus** with a feminine plural noun

✓ Possessive adjectives come before the noun they refer to.

They agree with what they describe, rather than with the person who owns that thing.

✓ Possessive adjectives are not usually used with parts of the body. Use **el/la/los** or **las** as appropriate instead.

✓ To avoid confusion, it is sometimes clearer to use **el coche de él/ella/ellas/ellos/usted** and so on rather than **su coche**.

Possessive adjectives (2)

- In Spanish, there is a second set of possessive adjectives, which mean *(of) mine*, *(of) yours* and so on. Like other adjectives in Spanish, they change in the feminine and plural forms.

Singular		Plural		Meaning
masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine	
mío	mía	míos	mías	mine/of mine
tuyo	tuya	tuyos	tuyas	yours/of yours (<i>belonging to tú</i>)
suyo	suya	suyos	suyas	his/of his; hers/of hers; of its; yours/of yours (<i>belonging to usted</i>)
nuestro	nuestra	nuestros	nuestras	ours/of ours
vuestro	vuestra	vuestros	vuestras	yours/of yours (<i>belonging to vosotros/as</i>)
suyo	suya	suyos	suyas	theirs/of theirs; yours/of yours (<i>belonging to ustedes</i>)

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying ‘you’ in Spanish**, see page 44.

un amigo <u>mío</u>	a (male) friend of mine, one of my (male) friends
una revista <u>tuya</u>	a magazine of yours, one of your magazines
una tía <u>suya</u>	an aunt of his/hers/theirs/yours, one of his/her/their/your aunts
una amiga <u>nuestra</u>	a (female) friend of ours, one of our friends
¿De quién es esta bufanda? – Es <u>mía</u>.	Whose scarf is this? – It’s mine.

☑ Note that unlike the other possessive adjectives, these adjectives go **AFTER** the noun they describe.

un amigo	a (male) friend of yours, one of your
<u>vuestro</u>	friends

Tip

Possessive adjectives agree with what they describe **NOT** with the person who owns that thing.

Estos apuntes son míos. These notes are mine.

Grammar Extra!

mío/mía and so on are also used in exclamations and when addressing someone. In this case they mean the same as *my* in English.

¡Dios <u>mío</u>!	My God!
amor <u>mío</u>	my love
Muy señor <u>mío</u>	Dear Sir
hija <u>mía</u>	my dear daughter

Indefinite adjectives

What is an indefinite adjective?

An **indefinite adjective** is one of a small group of adjectives used to talk about people or things in a general way without saying exactly who or what they are, for example, *several, all, every*.

- In English, indefinite adjectives do not change, but in Spanish most indefinite adjectives change for the feminine and plural forms.

Singular		Plural		Meaning
masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine	
algún	alguna	algunos	algunas	some; any
cada	cada			each; every
mismo	misma	mismos	mismas	same
mucho	mucha	muchos	muchas	a lot of
otro	otra	otros	otras	another; other
poco	poca	pocos	pocas	little; few
tanto	tanta	tantos	tantas	so much; so many
todo	toda	todos	todas	all; every
		varios	varias	several

<u>algún</u> día	some day
el <u>mismo</u> día	the same day
las <u>mismas</u> películas	the same films
<u>mucha</u> gente	a lot of people
<u>otro</u> coche	another car
<u>otra</u> manzana	another apple
<u>pocos</u> amigos	few friends

☑ Note that you can never use **otro** (meaning *other* or *another*) with **un** or **una**.

¿Me das otra manzana? Will you give me another apple?

¿Tienes otro jersey? Have you got another jumper?

Tip

Some and *any* are usually not translated before nouns that you can't count like bread, butter, water.

Hay pan en la mesa. There's some bread on the table.

¿Quieres café? Would you like some coffee?

¿Hay leche? Is there any milk?

No hay mantequilla. There isn't any butter.

► **todo/toda/todos/todas** (meaning *all* or *every*) can be followed by:

- a definite article (**el, la, los, las**)

Han estudiado durante toda la noche. They've been studying all night.

Vienen todos los días. They come every day.

- a demonstrative adjective (**este, ese, aquel** and so on)

Ha llovido toda esta semana. It has rained all this week.

- a possessive adjective (**mi, tu, su** and so on)

Pondré en orden todos mis libros I'll sort out all my books.

- a place name.

Lo sabe todo Madrid. The whole of Madrid knows it.

⇒ *For more information on **Articles, Demonstrative adjectives and Possessive adjectives**, see pages [10](#), [30](#) and [35](#).*

► As in English, Spanish indefinite adjectives come before the noun they describe.

las mismas películas the same films

Key points

✓ Like other adjectives, Spanish indefinite adjectives (such as **otro** and **todo**) must agree with what they describe.

✓ They go before the noun to which they relate.

PRONOUNS

What is a pronoun?

A **pronoun** is a word you use instead of a noun, when you do not need or want to name someone or something directly, for example, *it, you, none*.

- ▶ There are several different types of pronoun:
 - Personal pronouns such as *I, you, he, her* and *they*, which are used to refer to you, the person you are talking to, or other people and things. They can be either subject pronouns (*I, you, he* and so on) or object pronouns (*him, her, them*, and so on).
 - Possessive pronouns like *mine* and *yours*, which show who someone or something belongs to.
 - Indefinite pronouns like *someone* or *nothing*, which refer to people or things in a general way without saying exactly who or what they are.
 - Relative pronouns like *who, which* or *that*, which link two parts of a sentence together.
 - Interrogative pronouns like *who, what* or *which*, which are used in questions.
 - Demonstrative pronouns like *this* or *those*, which point things or people out.

- Reflexive pronouns, a type of object pronoun that forms part of Spanish reflexive verbs like **lavarse** (meaning *to wash*) or **llamarse** (meaning *to be called*).

⇒ For more information on **Reflexive verbs**, see page 91.

- Pronouns often stand in for a noun to save repeating it.

I finished my homework and gave it to my teacher.
Do you remember Jack? I saw him at the weekend.

- Word order with personal pronouns is usually different in Spanish and English.

Personal pronouns: subject

What is a subject pronoun?

A **subject pronoun** is a word such as *I, he, she* and *they*, that carries out the action expressed by the verb. Pronouns stand in for nouns when it is clear who or what is being talked about, for example, *My brother isn't here at the moment. He'll be back in an hour.*

1 Using subject pronouns

- Here are the Spanish subject pronouns:

- ☑ Note that there is an accent on **tú** (*you*) and **él** (*he*) so that they are not confused with **tu** (*your*) and **el** (*the*).

Tip

The abbreviations **Vd.** and **Vds.** are often used instead of **usted** and **ustedes**.

- In English, we use subject pronouns all the time – *I walk, you eat, they are going*. In Spanish, you don't need them if the verb endings and context make it clear who the subject is. For example **hablo español** can only mean *I speak Spanish* since the **-o** ending on the verb is only used with *I*. Similarly, **hablamos francés** can only mean *we speak French* since the **-amos** ending is only used with *we*. So the subject pronouns are not needed in these examples.

Tengo un hermano.

I've got a brother.

Tenemos dos coches.

We've got two cars.

- ☑ Note that **usted/Vd.** and **ustedes/Vds.** are often used for politeness, even if they are not really needed.

¿Conoce usted al señor Martín? Do you know Mr Martín?

Pasen ustedes por aquí. Please come this way.

- ⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

- Spanish subject pronouns are normally only used:

- for emphasis

¿Y tú qué piensas?

What do you think about it?

Ellos sí que llegaron tarde.

They really did arrive late.

- for contrast or clarity

Yo estudio español pero él estudia francés.

I study Spanish but he studies French.

Él lo hizo pero ella no.

He did it but she didn't.

- after **ser** (meaning *to be*)

Soy yo.

It's me.

¿Eres tú?

Is that you?

- in comparisons after **que** and **como**

Enrique es más alto que yo.

Enrique is taller than I am *or* than me.

Antonio no es tan alto como tú.

Antonio isn't as tall as you (are).

⇒ For more information on **Making comparisons**, see page [26](#).

- on their own without a verb

¿Quién dijo eso? – Él.

Who said that? – He did.

¿Quién quiere venir? – Yo.

Who wants to come? – I do.

- after certain prepositions

Es para ella.

It's for her.

⇒ For more information on **Pronouns after prepositions**, see page [54](#).

☑ Note that *it* used as the subject, and *they* referring to things, are never translated into Spanish.

¿Qué es? – Es una sorpresa.

What is it? – It's a surprise.

¿Qué son? – Son abrelatas.

What are they? – They are tin openers.

2 Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish

- In English, we have only one way of saying *you*. In Spanish, there are several words to choose from. The word you use depends on:
 - whether you are talking to one person or more than one person
 - whether you are talking to a friend or family member, or someone else.
- If you are talking to one person you know well, such as a friend, a young person or a relative, use **tú**.
- If you are talking to one person you do not know so well, such as your teacher, your boss or a stranger, use the polite form **usted**.
- If you are talking to more than one person you know well, use **vosotros** (or **vosotras**, if you are talking to women only) in Spain. Use **ustedes** instead in Latin America.
- Use **ustedes** if you are talking to more than one person you do not know so well.

Tip

Remember that adjectives describing **tú** and **usted** should be feminine if you're talking to a woman or girl, while adjectives describing **ustedes** should be feminine plural if you're talking to women or girls only.

3 Using the plural subject pronouns

- ▶ When you are talking about males only, use **nosotros**, **vosotros** or **ellos**.

Nosotros no somos italianos.

We are not Italian.

- ▶ When you are talking about females only, use **nosotras**, **vosotras** or **ellas**.

Hablé con mis hermanas.

I spoke to my sisters.

Ellas estaban de acuerdo conmigo.

They agreed with me.

- ▶ When you are talking about both males and females, use **nosotros**, **vosotros** or **ellos**.

Ellos sí que llegaron tarde.

They really did arrive late.

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish subject pronouns are: **yo**, **tú**, **él**, **ella**, **usted** in the singular, and **nosotros/nosotras**, **vosotros/vosotras**, **ellos/ellas**, **ustedes** in the plural.
- ✓ Don't use the subject pronouns (other than **usted** and **ustedes**) with verbs except for emphasis or clarity.
- ✓ Make sure you choose the correct form of the verb.
- ✓ Do use the subject pronouns:

- after **ser** (meaning *to be*)
 - in comparisons after **que** and **como**
 - in one-word answers to questions.
- ✓ Choose the word for *you* carefully. Remember to think about how many people you are talking to and your relationship with them when deciding between **tú**, **vosotros**, **vosotras**, **usted** and **ustedes**.
 - ✓ *It* as the subject of the verb, and *they* when it refers to things are not translated in Spanish.
 - ✓ Use masculine plural forms (**nosotros**, **vosotros**, **ellos**) for groups made up of men and women.
 - ✓ Remember to make any adjectives describing the subject agree.

Personal pronouns: direct object

What is a direct object pronoun?

A **direct object pronoun** is a word such as *me*, *him*, *us* and *them*, which is used instead of the noun to stand in for the person or thing most directly affected by the action expressed by the verb.

1 Using direct object pronouns

- ▶ Direct object pronouns stand in for nouns when it is clear who or what is being talked about, and save having to repeat the noun.

I've lost my glasses. Have you seen them?
 'Have you met Jo?' – 'Yes, I really like her!'

- ▶ Here are the Spanish direct object pronouns:

Singular	Meaning	Plural	Meaning
me	me	nos	us
te	you (relating to tú)	os	you (relating to vosotros/vosotras)
lo	him it (masculine) you (relating to usted – masculine)	los	them (masculine) you (relating to ustedes – masculine)
la	her it (feminine) you (relating to usted – feminine)	las	them (feminine) you (relating to ustedes – feminine)

Te quiero.

I love you.

No los toques.

Don't touch them.

- ☑ Note that you cannot use the Spanish direct object pronouns on their own without a verb or after a preposition such as **a** or **de**.

⇒ For more information on *Pronouns after prepositions*, see page 54.

2 Word order with direct object pronouns

- ▶ The direct object pronoun usually comes before the verb.

¿**Las** ve usted?

Can you see them?

¿No **me** oís?

Can't you hear me?

Tu hija no nos conoce.

Your daughter doesn't know us.

¿**Lo** has visto?

Have you seen it?

- ▶ In orders and instructions telling someone to do something, the pronoun joins onto the end of the verb to form one word.

Ayúdame.

Help me.

Acompáñanos.

Come with us.

- ☑ Note that you will often need to add a written accent to preserve the spoken stress when adding pronouns to the end of verbs.

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page [200](#).

- ▶ In orders and instructions telling someone NOT To do something, the pronoun does not join onto the end of the verb.

No los toques.

Don't touch them.

- ▶ If the pronoun is the object of an infinitive (the *to* form of the verb) or a gerund (the *-ing* form of the verb), you always add the pronoun to the end of the verb to form one word, unless the infinitive or gerund follows another verb. Again, you may have to add a written accent to preserve the stress.

Se fue después de arreglarlo. He left after fixing it.

Practicándolo, aprenderás. You'll learn by practising it.

⇒ For more information on **Verbs and Gerunds**, see pages [69](#) and [125](#).

- ▶ Where an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can put the pronoun either at the end of the infinitive or gerund, or before the other verb.

Vienen a vernos or **Nos vienen a ver.** They are coming to see us.

Está comiéndolo or **Lo está comiendo.**

He's eating it.

⇒ For further information on the **Order of object pronouns**, see page 52.

3 Special use of lo

► **lo** is sometimes used to refer back to an idea or information that has already been given. The word *it* is often missed out in English.

¿Va a venir María? – No lo sé. Is María coming? – I don't know.

Habían comido ya pero no nos lo dijeron. They had already eaten, but they didn't tell us.

Yo dibujo bien pero él lo hace mejor. I'm good at drawing but he's better.

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish direct object pronouns are: **me, te, lo, la** in the singular, and **nos, os, los, las** in the plural.
- ✓ The object pronoun usually comes before the verb.
- ✓ Object pronouns are joined to the end of infinitives, gerunds or verbs instructing someone to do something.

- ✓ If an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can choose whether to add the object pronoun to the end of the infinitive or gerund or to put it before the first verb.
- ✓ **lo** is sometimes used to refer back to an idea or information that has already been given.

Personal pronouns: indirect object

What is an indirect object pronoun?

An **indirect object pronoun** is used instead of a noun to show the person or thing an action is intended to benefit or harm, for example, *me* in *He gave me a book.*; *Can you get me a towel?*; *He wrote to me.*

1 Using indirect object pronouns

- It is important to understand the difference between direct and indirect object pronouns in English, as they can have different forms in Spanish.
- You can usually test whether an object is a direct object or an indirect one by asking questions about the action using *what* and *who*:
 - an indirect object answers the question *who ... to?* or *who ... for?*, equally *what ... to?* or *what ... for?*

He gave me a book. → *Who did he give the book to?* ' me
(= *indirect object pronoun*)

Can you get me a towel? ' *Who can you get a towel for?* ' me
(= *indirect object pronoun*)

We got some varnish for it. ' *What did you get the varnish for?* ' it (= *indirect object pronoun*)

- if something answers the question *what* or *who*, then it is the direct object and not the indirect object.

He gave me a book. → *What did he give me?* ' a book (= *direct object*)

I saw Mandy. ' *Who did you see?* ' Mandy (= *direct object*)

We got some varnish for it. ' *What did you get?* ' some varnish (= *direct object*)

- ☑ Note that a verb won't necessarily have both a direct and an indirect object.

Singular	Meaning	Plural	Meaning
me	me, to me, for me	nos	us, to us, for us
te	you, to you, for you (relating to tú)	os	you, to you, for you (relating to vosotros/vosotras)
le	him, to him, for him her, to her, for her it, to it, for it you, to you, for you (relating to usted)	les	them, to them, for them you, to you, for you (relating to ustedes)

- The pronouns shown in the table are used instead of using the preposition **a** with a noun.

Estoy escribiendo a Teresa. I am writing to Teresa. →

Le estoy escribiendo. I am writing to her.

Compra un regalo a los Buy the children a present.

niños. →

Cómprales un regalo. Buy them a present.

- Some Spanish verbs like **mirar** (meaning *to look at*), **esperar** (meaning *to wait for*) and **buscar** (meaning *to look for*) take a

direct object, because the Spanish construction is different from the English.

Grammar Extra!

You should usually use direct object pronouns rather than indirect object pronouns when replacing personal **a** + noun.

Vi a Teresa. → **La vi.** I saw Teresa. → I saw her.

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page [182](#).

2 Word order with indirect object pronouns

► The indirect object pronoun usually comes before the verb.

Sofía os ha escrito. Sophie has written to you.

¿Os ha escrito Sofía? Has Sofía written to you?

Carlos no nos habla. Carlos doesn't speak to us.

¿Qué te pedían? What were they asking you for?

► In orders and instructions telling someone to do something, the pronoun goes on the end of the verb to form one word.

Respóndeme. Answer me.

Dime la respuesta. Tell me the answer.

☑ Note that you will often need to add a written accent to preserve the spoken stress.

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page [200](#).

- In orders and instructions telling someone NOT to do something, the pronoun does not join onto the end of the verb.

No me digas la respuesta. Don't tell me the answer.

- If the pronoun is the object of an infinitive (the *to* form of the verb) or a gerund (the *-ing* form of the verb), you always add the pronoun to the end of the verb to form one word, unless the infinitive or gerund follows another verb. Again, you may have to add a written accent to preserve the stress.

Eso de darle tu dirección no fue muy prudente. It wasn't very wise to give him your address.

Gritándole tanto lo vas a asustar. You'll frighten him by shouting at him like that.

- Where an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can put the pronoun either at the end of the infinitive or gerund, or before the other verb.

Quiero decirte algo. or Te quiero decir algo. I want to tell you something.

Estoy escribiéndole. or Le estoy escribiendo. I am writing to him/her.

- ⇒ For further information on the **Order of object pronouns**, see page 52.

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish indirect object pronouns are: **me**, **te**, **le** in the singular, and **nos**, **os**, **les** in the plural.
- ✓ They can replace the preposition **a** (meaning *to*) + noun.
- ✓ Like the direct object pronoun, the indirect object pronoun usually comes before the verb.
- ✓ Object pronouns are joined to the end of infinitives, gerunds or verbs instructing someone to do something.
- ✓ If an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can choose whether to add the object pronoun to the end of the infinitive or gerund or to put it before the first verb.

Order of object pronouns

- Two object pronouns are often used together in the same sentence; for example: *he gave me them or he gave them to me*. In Spanish, you should always put the indirect object pronoun before the direct object pronoun.

Indirect

me

te

nos

os

BEFORE

Direct

lo

la

los

las

Ana os lo mandará mañana. Ana will send it to you

	tomorrow.
¿Te los ha enseñado mi hermana?	Has my sister shown them to you?
No me lo digas.	Don't tell me (that).
Todos estaban pidiéndotelo.	They were all asking you for it.
No quiere prestárnosla.	He won't lend it to us.

- You have to use **se** instead of **le** (*to him, to her, to you*) and **les** (*to them, to you*), when you are using the object pronouns **lo, la, los,** or **las**.

Se lo di ayer. I gave it to him/her/you/them yesterday.

Se las enviaré. I'll send them to him/her/you/them.

Key points

- ✓ When combining two object pronouns, put the indirect object pronoun before the direct object pronoun.
- ✓ Use **se** as the indirect object pronoun rather than **le** or **les** when there is more than one object pronoun.

Further information on object pronouns

- The object pronoun **le** can mean (*to*) *him, (to) her* and (*to*) *you*; **les** can mean (*to*) *them* and (*to*) *you*, and **se** can mean all of these things, which could lead to some confusion.

- To make it clear which one is meant, **a él** (meaning *to him*), **a ella** (meaning *to her*), **a usted** (meaning *to you*) and so on can be added to the phrase.

A ella le escriben mucho. They write to her often.

A ellos se lo van a mandar pronto. They will be sending it to them soon.

- When a noun object comes before the verb, the corresponding object pronoun must be used too.

A tu hermano lo conozco bien. I know your brother well. (*literally: Your brother I know him well.*)

A María la vemos algunas veces. We sometimes see María. (*literally: María we see her sometimes.*)

- Indirect object pronouns are often used in constructions with the definite article with parts of the body or items of clothing to show who they belong to. In English, we'd use a possessive adjective.

La chaqueta le estaba ancha. His jacket was too loose.

Me duele el tobillo. My ankle's sore.

- ⇒ For more information on **The definite article and Possessive adjectives**, see pages [11](#), [35](#) and [37](#).

- Indirect object pronouns can also be used in certain common phrases which use reflexive verbs.

Se me ha perdido el bolígrafo. I have lost my pen.

- ⇒ For more information on **Reflexive verbs**, see page [91](#).

☑ Note that in Spain, you will often hear **le** and **les** used instead of **lo** and **los** as direct object pronouns when referring to men and boys. It is probably better not to copy this practice since it is considered incorrect in some varieties of Spanish, particularly Latin American ones.

Pronouns after prepositions

- ▶ In English, we use *me*, *you*, *him* and so on after a preposition, for example, *he came towards me*; *it's for you*; *books by him*. In Spanish, there is a special set of pronouns which are used after prepositions.
- ▶ The pronouns used after a preposition in Spanish are the same as the subject pronouns, except for the forms **mí** (meaning *me*) **ti** (meaning *you*), and **sí** (meaning *himself, herself, yourself, themselves, yourselves*).

Singular	Meaning	Plural	Meaning
mí	me	nosotros	us (<i>masculine</i>)
ti	you	nosotras	us (<i>feminine</i>)
él	him	vosotros	you (<i>masculine</i>)
ella	her	vosotras	you (<i>feminine</i>)
usted (Vd.)	you	ellos	them (<i>masculine</i>)
sí	himself herself yourself	ellas	them (<i>feminine</i>)
		ustedes (Vds.)	you
		sí	themselves yourselves

Pienso en ti.

I think about you.

¿Son para mí?

Are they for me?

No he sabido nada de él.

I haven't heard from him.

Es para ella.

It's for her.

Iban hacia ellos.

They were going towards them.

Volveréis sin nosotros.

You'll come back without us.

Volaban sobre vosotros.

They were flying above you.

☑ Note that **mí**, **sí** and **él** each have an accent, to distinguish them from **mi** (meaning *my*), **si** (meaning *if*), and **el** (meaning *the*), but **ti** does not have an accent.

➤ These pronouns are often used for emphasis.

¿A **ti** no te escriben? Don't they write to you?

Me lo manda a **mí**, no a **ti**. She's sending it to me, not to you.

➤ **con** (meaning *with*) combines with **mí**, **ti** and **sí** to form:

• **conmigo** with me

Ven **conmigo**. Come with me.

• **contigo** with you

Me gusta estar **contigo**. I like being with you.

• **consigo** with himself/herself/yourself/themselves/yourselves

Lo trajeron **consigo**. They brought it with them.

➤ **entre**, **hasta**, **salvo**, **menos** and **según** are always used with the subject pronouns (**yo** and **tú**), rather than with the object pronouns (**mí** and **ti**).

• **entre** between, among

entre tú y yo between you and me

• **hasta** even, including

Hasta yo puedo hacerlo.

Even I can do it.

- **menos** except

todos menos yo

everybody except me

- **salvo** except

todos salvo yo

everyone except me

- **según** according to

según tú

according to you

⇒ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page [42](#).

Key points

- ✓ Most prepositions are followed by the forms: **mí**, **ti**, **sí** and so on.
- ✓ **con** combines with **mí**, **ti** and **sí** to form **conmigo**, **contigo** and **consigo**.
- ✓ **entre**, **hasta**, **menos**, **salvo** and **según** are followed by the subject pronouns **yo** and **tú**.

Possessive pronouns

What is a possessive pronoun?

A **possessive pronoun** is one of the words *mine, yours, hers, his, ours* or *theirs*, which are used instead of a noun to show that one person or thing belongs to another, for example, *Ask Carole if this pen is hers; Mine's the blue one.*

► Here are the Spanish possessive pronouns:

Masculine singular	Feminine singular	Masculine plural	Feminine plural	Meaning
el mío	la mía	los míos	las mías	mine
el tuyo	la tuya	los tuyos	las tuyas	yours (<i>belonging to tú</i>)
el suyo	la suya	los suyos	las suyas	his; hers; its; yours (<i>belonging to usted</i>)
el nuestro	la nuestra	los nuestros	las nuestras	ours
el vuestro	la vuestra	los vuestros	las vuestras	yours (<i>belonging to vosotros/vosotras</i>)
el suyo	la suya	los suyos	las suyas	theirs; yours (<i>belonging to ustedes</i>)

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

Pregunta a Cristina si este bolígrafo es el suyo

Ask Cristina if this pen is hers.

¿Qué equipo ha ganado, el suyo o el nuestro ?

Which team won – theirs or ours?

Mi perro es más joven que el tuyo

My dog is younger than yours.

Daniel pensó que esos libros eran los suyos

Daniel thought those books were his.

Si no tienes lápices, te prestaré los míos

If you haven't got any pencils, I'll lend you mine.

Las habitaciones son más

The rooms are smaller than

pequeñas que las vuestras yours.

Tip

In Spanish, possessive pronouns agree with what they describe, NOT with the person who owns that thing. For example, **el suyo** can mean *his, hers, yours* or *theirs*, but can only be used to replace a masculine singular noun.

- ☑ Note that the prepositions **a** and **de** combine with the article **el** to form **al** and **del**, for example, **a + el mío** becomes **al mío**, and **de + el mío** becomes **del mío**.

Prefiero tu coche al mío. I prefer your car to mine.

**Su coche se parece al
vuestro.** His/Her/Their car looks like
yours.

**Mi piso está encima del
tuyo.** My flat is above yours.

**Su colegio está cerca del
nuestro** His/Her/Your/Their school is
near ours.

- Instead of **el suyo/la suya/los suyos/las suyas**, it is sometimes clearer to say **el/la/los/las de usted, el/la/los/las de ustedes, el/la/los/las de ellos** and so on. You choose between **el/la/los/las** to agree with the noun referred to.

mi libro y el de usted my book and yours

- **el/la/los/las de** can also be used with a name or other noun referring to somebody.

Juan tiene un coche bonito Juan's got a nice car, but I
pero yo prefiero el de Ana. prefer Ana's.
Ellos tienen una casa bonita They've got a nice house,
pero yo prefiero la del médico. but I prefer the doctor's.

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish possessive pronouns are **el mío, el tuyo, el suyo, el nuestro, el vuestro** and **el suyo** when they stand in for a masculine noun. If they stand in for a feminine or a plural noun, their forms change accordingly.
- ✓ In Spanish, the pronoun you choose has to agree with the noun it replaces, and not with the person who owns that thing.
- ✓ **el/la/los/las de** are used with a noun or pronoun to mean the *one(s) belonging to ...*

Indefinite pronouns

What is an indefinite pronoun?

An **indefinite pronoun** is one of a small group of pronouns such as *everything, nobody* and *something*

which are used to refer to people or things in a general way without saying exactly who or what they are.

► Here are the most common Spanish indefinite pronouns:

- **algo** something, anything

Tengo algo para ti. I have something for you.

¿Viste algo ? Did you see anything?

- **alguien** somebody, anybody

Alguien me lo ha dicho. Somebody told me.

¿Has visto a alguien ? Have you seen anybody?

Tip

Don't forget to use personal **a** before indefinite pronouns referring to people when they are the object of a verb.

¿Viste a alguien? Did you see anybody?

No vi a nadie. I didn't see anybody.

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page [182](#).

- **alguno/alguna/algunos/algunas** some, a few

Algunos de los niños ya Some of the children can

saben leer. already read.

- **cada uno/una** each (one), everybody

Le dio una manzana a cada uno. She gave each one an apple.

¡Cada uno a su casa! Everybody home!

- **cualquiera** anybody; any

Cualquiera puede hacerlo. Anybody can do it.

Cualquiera de las explicaciones vale. Any of the explanations is valid.

- **mucho/mucha/muchos/muchas** much; many

Muchas de las casas no tenían jardín. Many of the houses didn't have a garden.

- **nada** nothing, anything

¿Qué tienes en la mano? What have you got in your hand?

– **Nada.** – Nothing.

No dijo nada. He didn't say anything.

- **nadie** nobody, anybody

¿A quién ves? – A nadie. Who can you see? – Nobody.

No quiere ver a nadie. He doesn't want to see anybody.

Tip

Don't forget to use personal **a** before indefinite pronouns referring to people when they are the object of a verb.

¿Viste **a** alguien? Did you see anybody?

No vi **a** nadie. I didn't see anybody.

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page 182.

- **ninguno/ninguna** none, any

¿Cuántas tienes? – How many have you got? –

Ninguna. None.

No me queda ninguno. I haven't any left *or* I have none left.

- **otro/otra/otros/otras** another one; others

No me gusta este modelo. I don't like this model. Have

¿Tienes otro? you got another?

☑ Note that you can never put **un** or **una** before **otro** or **otra**.

- **poco/poca/pocos/pocas** little; few

sólo unos pocos only a few

- **tanto/tanta/tantos/tantas** so much; so many

¿Se oía mucho ruido? – No Was there a lot of noise? – Not
tanto. so much.

- **todo/toda/todos/todas** all; everything

Lo ha estropeado todo. He has spoiled everything.

Todo va bien. It's all going well.

- **uno ... el otro/una ... la otra** (the) one ... the other

Uno dijo que sí y el otro One said yes while the other
que no. said no.

- **unos ... los otros/unas ... las otras** some ... the others

Unos cuestan 30 euros, los Some cost 30 euros, the
otros 40 euros. others 40 euros.

- **varios/varias** several

Varios de ellos me gustan I like several of them very
mucho. much.

Tip

Don't forget to make those pronouns that have feminine and plural forms agree with the noun they refer to.

He perdido mi goma I've lost my rubber but I've
pero tengo otra. got another one.

- ☑ Note that **algo**, **alguien** and **alguno** can never be used after a negative such as **no**. Instead you must use the appropriate negative pronouns, **nada**, **nadie**, **ninguno**.

No veo a nadie.

I can't see anybody.

No tengo nada que hacer.

I haven't got anything to do.

- You use **nada**, **nadie** and **ninguno** on their own without **no** to answer questions.

¿Qué pasa? – Nada.

What's happening? – Nothing.

¿Quién habló? – Nadie.

Who spoke? – Nobody.

¿Cuántos quedan? –

How many are there left? –

Ninguno.

None.

- You also use **nada**, **nadie** and **ninguno** on their own without **no** when they come before a verb.

Nada lo asusta.

Nothing frightens him.

Nadie habló.

Nobody spoke.

**Ninguno de mis amigos
quiso venir.**

None of my friends wanted
to come.

- ⇒ For more information on **Negatives**, see page [157](#).

Key points

- ✓ Where indefinite pronouns have alternative endings, they must agree with the noun they refer to.
- ✓ *Anything* is usually translated by **algo** in questions and by **nada** in sentences containing **no**.
- ✓ *Anybody* is usually translated by **alguien** in questions and by **nadie** in sentences containing **no**.
- ✓ When **nada**, **nadie** or **ninguno** come after the verb, remember to put **no** before it. When they come before the verb, don't use **no**.

Relative pronouns

What is a relative pronoun?

In English, a **relative pronoun** is one of the words *who*, *which* and *that* (and the more formal *whom*) which can be used to introduce information that makes it clear which person or thing is being talked about, for example, *The man who has just come in is Ann's boyfriend.*; *The vase that you broke was quite valuable.*

Relative pronouns can also introduce further information about someone or something, for example, *Peter, who is a brilliant painter, wants to study art.*; *Jane's house, which was built in 1890, needs a lot of repairs.*

1 **Relative pronouns referring to people**

- In English, we use the relative pronouns *who*, *whom* and *that* to talk about people. In Spanish, **que** is used.

el hombre que vino ayer the man who came
yesterday

Mi hermano, que tiene veinte años, es mecánico. My brother, who is twenty, is a mechanic.

el hombre que vi en la calle the man (that) I saw in the street

Tip

In English we often miss out the relative pronouns *who*, *whom* and *that*. For example, we can say both *the friends that I see most*, or *the friends I see most*.

In Spanish, you can **NEVER** miss out **que** in this way.

- When the relative pronoun is used with a preposition, use **el/la/los/las que** or **quien/quienes** which must agree with the noun it replaces; **el que** changes for the feminine and plural forms, **quien** changes only in the plural.
- Here are the Spanish relative pronouns referring to people that are used after a preposition:

	Masculine	Feminine	Meaning
Singular	el que quien	la que quien	who, that, whom
Plural	los que quienes	las que quienes	who, that, whom

las mujeres con <u>las que</u> or con <u>quienes</u> estaba hablando	the women (that) she was talking to
La chica de <u>la que</u> or de <u>quien</u> te hablé llega mañana.	The girl (that) I told you about is coming tomorrow.
los niños de <u>los que</u> or de <u>quienes</u> se ocupa usted	the children (that) you look after

☑ Note that when **de** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **del que**. When **a** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **al que**.

el chico <u>del que</u> te hablé	the boy I told you about
Vive con un hombre <u>al que</u> adora.	She lives with a man she adores.

Tip

In English, we often put prepositions at the end of the sentence, for example, *the man she was talking to*. In Spanish, you can never put a preposition at the end of a sentence.

el hombre <u>con el que</u> or <u>con</u> <u>quien</u> estaba hablando	the man she was talking to
---	----------------------------

⇒ For more information on **Prepositions**, see page 178.

2 Relative pronouns referring to things

- In English, we use the relative pronouns *which* and *that* to talk about things. In Spanish, **que** is used.

la novela que ganó el premio the novel that or which won the prize

el coche que compré the car (that or which) I bought

Tip

In English, we often miss out the relative pronouns *which* and *that*. For example, we can say both *the house which we want to buy*, or *the house we want to buy*.

In Spanish, you can NEVER miss out **que** in this way.

- When the relative pronoun is used with a preposition, use **el/la/los/las que**, which must agree with the noun it replaces. Here are the Spanish relative pronouns referring to things that are used after a preposition:

	Masculine	Feminine	Meaning
Singular	el que	la que	which, that
Plural	los que	las que	which, that

la tienda a la que siempre va the shop (that *or* which) she always goes to

los temas de los que habla the subjects he talks about

- ☑ Note that when **de** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **del que**. When **a** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **al**

que.

el programa <u>del que</u> te hablé	the programme I told you about
el banco <u>al que</u> fuiste	the bank you went to

- The neuter form **lo que** is used when referring to the whole of the previous part of the sentence.

Todo estaba en silencio, <u>lo que</u> me pareció raro.	All was silent, which I thought was odd.
--	---

⇒ For more information on **lo que**, see page 17.

Tip

In English, we often put prepositions at the end of the sentence, for example, *the shop she always goes to*. In Spanish, you can never put a preposition at the end of a sentence.

la tienda <u>a la que</u> siempre va	the shop she always goes <u>to</u>
la película <u>de la que</u> te hablaba	the film I was telling you <u>about</u>

In English we can use *whose* to show possession, for example, *the woman whose son is ill*. In Spanish you use **cuyo/cuya/cuyos/cuyas**; **cuyo** is actually an adjective and must agree with the noun it describes NOT with the person who owns that thing.

La mujer, <u>cuyo</u> nombre era	The woman, whose name
Antonia, estaba jubilada.	was Antonia, was retired.
el señor en <u>cuya</u> casa me	the gentleman whose house I
alojé	stayed in

In your reading, you may come across the forms **el cual/la cual/los cuales/las cuales** which are a more formal alternative to **el que/la que/los que/las que** after a preposition.

las mujeres con <u>las cuales</u>	the women (that <i>or</i> who) she
estaba hablando	was talking to
la ventana desde <u>la cual</u>	the window from which they
nos observaban	were watching us

el cual/la cual/los cuales/las cuales are also useful to make it clear who you are talking about in other cases where the pronoun does not immediately follow the person or thing it refers to.

El padre de Elena, <u>el cual</u> tiene	Elena's father, who has a
mucho dinero, es ...	lot of money, is ...

3 Other uses of el que, la que, los que, las que

- You can use **el que, la que, los que, las que** to mean *the one(s) (who/which) or those who*.

Esa película es la que quiero ver. That film is the one I want to see.

los que quieren irse those who want to leave

Key points

- ✓ **que** can refer to both people and things in Spanish.
- ✓ In English we often miss out the relative pronouns *who*, *which* and *that*, but in Spanish you can never miss out **que**.
- ✓ After a preposition you use **el que/la que/los que/las que** or **quien/quienes** if you are referring to people; you use **el que/la que/los que/las que** if you are referring to things. **el que** and **quien** agree with the nouns they replace.
- ✓ **a + el que → al que**
de + el que → del que
- ✓ Never put the preposition at the end of the sentence in Spanish.
- ✓ **el que/la que/los que** and **las que** are also used to mean *the one(s) who/which* or *those who*.

Interrogative pronouns

What is an interrogative pronoun?

In English, an **interrogative pronoun** is one of the words *who*, *which*, *whose*, *whom*, and *what* when they are used without a noun to ask questions.

► These are the interrogative pronouns in Spanish:

Singular	Plural	Meaning
¿qué?	¿qué?	what?
¿cuál?	¿cuáles?	which? which one(s)?; what?
¿quién?	¿quiénes?	who? (as subject or after a preposition)
¿cuánto?/ ¿cuánta?	¿cuántos?/ ¿cuántas?	how much? how many?

☑ Note that question words have an accent on them in Spanish.

1 ¿qué?

► **¿qué?** is the equivalent of *what?* in English.

¿Qué están haciendo?

What are they doing?

¿Qué dices?

What are you saying?

¿Para qué lo quieres?

What do you want it for?

► You can use **¿por qué?** in the same way as *why?* in English.

¿Por qué no vienes?

Why don't you come?

2 ¿cuál?, ¿cuáles?

- ▶ **¿cuál?** and **¿cuáles?** are usually the equivalent of *which?* in English and are used when there is a choice between two or more things.

¿Cuál de estos vestidos te gusta más? Which of these dresses do you like best?

¿Cuáles quieres? Which (ones) do you want?

📌 Note that you don't use **cuál** before a noun; use **qué** instead.

¿Qué libro es más interesante? Which book is more interesting?

⇒ For more information on **Interrogative adjectives**, see page 32.

3 **qué es or cuál es?**

- ▶ You should only use **¿qué es ...?** (meaning *what is...?*) and **¿qué son ...?** (meaning *what are...?*) when you are asking someone to define, explain or classify something.

¿Qué es esto? What is this?

¿Qué son los genes? What are genes?

- ▶ Use **¿cuál es ...?** and **¿cuáles son...?** (also meaning *what is ...?* and *what are ...?*) when you want someone to specify a particular detail, number, name and so on.

¿Cuál es la capital de España? What is the capital of Spain?

¿Cuál es tu consejo? What's your advice?

4 **¿quién?**

- **¿quién?** and **¿quiénes?** are the equivalent of *who?* in English when it is the subject of the verb or when used with a preposition.

¿Quién ganó la carrera? Who won the race?

¿Con quiénes los viste? Who did you see them with?

¿A quién se lo diste? Who did you give it to?

- **¿a quién?** and **¿a quiénes?** are the equivalent of *who(m)?* when it is the object of the verb.

¿A quién viste? Who did you see? *or* Whom did you see?

¿A quiénes ayudaste? Who did you help? *or* Whom did you help?

- **¿de quién?** and **¿de quiénes?** are the equivalent of *whose?* in English.

¿De quién es este libro? Whose is this book? *or* Whose book is this?

¿De quiénes son estos coches? Whose are these cars? *or* Whose cars are these?

5 **¿cuánto?, ¿cuántos?**

- **¿cuánto?** (*masculine*) and **¿cuánta?** (*feminine*) are the equivalent of *how much?* in English. **¿cuántos?** (*masculine plural*) and **¿cuántas?** (*feminine plural*) are the equivalent of *how many?*

¿Cuánto es? How much is it?

¿Cuántos tienes?

How many have you got?

Demonstrative pronouns

What is a demonstrative pronoun?

In English a **demonstrative pronoun** is one of the words *this, that, these, and those* used instead of a noun to point people or things out, for example, *That* looks fun.

1 Using demonstrative pronouns

► These are the demonstrative pronouns in Spanish:

	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Meaning
Singular	este	esta	esto	this, this one
	ese	esa	eso	that, that one (<i>close by</i>)
	aquel	aquella	aquello	that, that one (<i>further away</i>)
Plural	estos	estas		these, these ones
	esos	esas		those, those ones (<i>close by</i>)
	aquellos	aquellas		those, those ones (<i>further away</i>)

► The demonstrative pronouns in Spanish have to agree with the noun that they are replacing.

¿Qué abrigo te gusta más? – Which coat do you like best? –

Este de aquí.

This one here.

Aquella casa era más grande que esta.

That house was bigger than this one.

estos libros y aquellos

these books and those (over there)

Quiero estas sandalias y esas.

I'd like these sandals and those ones.

► **ése or aquel?**

- In English we use *that* and *those* to talk about anything that is not close by. In Spanish, you need to be a bit more precise.
- Use **ese/esa** and so on to indicate things and people that are nearer to the person you're talking to than to you.

Me gusta más ese que tienes I prefer the one you've got in
en la mano. your hand.

- Use **ese/esa** and so on to indicate things and people that aren't very far away.

Si no te apetece este If you don't fancy this restaurant,
restaurante podemos we can go to that one opposite.
ir a ese de enfrente.

- Use **aquel/aquella** and so on to talk about things that are further away.

Aquella al fondo de la calle My house is that one at the end
es mi casa. of the street.

- ☑ Note that the masculine and feminine forms of demonstrative pronouns are sometimes written with an accent, (**éste/ésta/éstos/éstas; ése/ésa/ésos/ésas; aquél/aquélla/aquéllos/aquéllas) to distinguish them from demonstrative adjectives. Compare:**

este bolígrafo this pen **éste** this one

⇒ For more information on **Demonstrative adjectives**, see page 30.

- The neuter forms (**esto**, **eso**, **aquello**) are used to talk about an object you don't recognize or about an idea or statement.

¿Qué es **eso** que llevas en la mano? What's that you've got in your hand?

No puedo creer que **esto** me esté pasando a mí. I can't believe this is really happening to me.

Aquello sí que me gustó. I really did like that.

- ☑ Note that the neuter forms of demonstrative pronouns do not have an accent.

Key points

- ✓ Spanish demonstrative pronouns agree with the noun they are replacing.
- ✓ Masculine and feminine demonstrative pronouns sometimes have an accent on them in both the singular and the plural.
- ✓ In Spanish you have to choose the correct pronoun to emphasize the difference between something that is close to you and something that is further away:
 - **este/esta/estos** and **estas** (meaning *this/these*) are used to indicate things and people that are very close.
 - **ese/esa/esos** and **esas** (meaning *that/those*) are used to indicate things and people that are near

the person you are talking to or that aren't too far away.

- **aquel/aquella/aquellos/aquellas** (meaning *that/those*) are used to indicate things and people that are further away.

✓ The neuter pronouns (**esto, eso** and **aquello**) are used to talk about things you don't recognize or to refer to statements or ideas. They never have an accent.

VERBS

What is a verb?

A **verb** is a 'doing' word which describes what someone or something does, what someone or something is, or what happens to them, for example, *be, sing, live*.

Overview of verbs

- Verbs are frequently used with a noun, with somebody's name or, particularly in English, with a pronoun such as *I, you* or *she*. They can relate to the present, the past and the future; this is called their tense.
- ⇒ For more information on **Nouns and Pronouns**, see pages [1](#) and [41](#).
- Verbs are either:
 - **regular**: their forms follow the normal rules
 - **irregular**: their forms do not follow normal rules
- Almost all verbs have a form called the infinitive. This is a base form of the verb (for example, *walk, see, hear*) that hasn't had any endings added to it and doesn't relate to any particular tense. In English, the infinitive is usually shown with *to*, as in *to speak, to eat, to live*.
- In Spanish, the infinitive is always made up of just one word (never two as in *to speak* in English) and ends in **-ar, -er** or **-ir**: for example, **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*). All Spanish verbs belong to one of these three types, which are called conjugations. We will look at each of these three conjugations in turn on the next few pages.
- Regular English verbs have other forms apart from the infinitive: a form ending in **-s** (*walks*), a form ending in **-ing** (*walking*), and a form ending in **-ed** (*walked*).
- Spanish verbs have many more forms than this, which are made up of endings added to a stem. The stem of a verb can usually be worked out from the infinitive.
- Spanish verb endings change depending on who or what is doing the action and on when the action takes place. In fact, the ending is very often the only thing that shows you who is doing the action, as the Spanish equivalents of *I, you, he* and so on (**yo, tú, él** and so on) are not used very much. So, both **hablo** on its own and **yo hablo** mean *I speak*. Sometimes there is a name or a noun in the sentence to make it clear who is doing the action.

José habla español.

José speaks Spanish.

El profesor habla español.

The teacher speaks Spanish.

⇒ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page [42](#).

- Spanish verb forms also change depending on whether you are talking about the present, past or future, so (**yo**) **hablaré** means *I will speak* while (**yo**) **hablé** means *I spoke*.

- Some verbs in Spanish do not follow the usual patterns. These irregular verbs include some very common and important verbs like **ir** (meaning *to go*), **ser** and **estar** (meaning *to be*) and **hacer** (meaning *to do* or *to make*). Other verbs are only slightly irregular, changing their stems in certain tenses.

⇒ For **Verb Tables**, see supplement.

Key points

- ✓ Spanish verbs have different forms depending on who or what is doing the action and on the tense.
- ✓ Spanish verb forms are made up of a stem and an ending. The stem is usually based on the infinitive of the verb. The ending depends on who or what is doing the action and on when the action takes place.
- ✓ Regular verbs follow the standard patterns for **-ar**, **-er** and **-ir** verbs. Irregular verbs do not.

The present tenses

What are the present tenses?

The **present tenses** are the verb forms that are used to talk about what is true at the moment, what happens regularly and what is happening now; for example, *I'm a student*; *I travel to college by train*; *I'm studying languages*.

- In English, there are two tenses you can use to talk about the present:

- the present simple tense

I live here.

They get up early.

- the present continuous tense

He is eating an apple.

You aren't working very hard.

- In Spanish, there is also a present simple and a present continuous tense. As in English, the present simple in Spanish is used to talk about:

- things that are generally true

En invierno hace frío.

It's cold in winter.

- things that are true at the moment

Carlos no come carne.

Carlos doesn't eat meat.

► things that happen at intervals

A menudo vamos al cine.

We often go to the cinema.

► The present continuous tense in Spanish is used to talk about things that are happening right now or at the time of writing:

Marta está viendo la televisión.

Marta is watching television.

► However, there are times where the use of the present tenses in the two languages is not exactly the same.

⇒ For more information on the use of the **Present tenses**, see pages 79 and 84.

The present simple tense

1 Forming the present simple tense of regular -ar verbs

► If the infinitive of the Spanish verb ends in **-ar**, it means that the verb belongs to the first conjugation, for example, **hablar**, **lavar**, **llamar**.

► To know which form of the verb to use in Spanish, you need to work out what the stem of the verb is and then add the correct ending. The stem of regular **-ar** verbs in the present simple tense is formed by taking the infinitive and chopping off **-ar**.

Infinitive	Stem (without -ar)
hablar (to speak)	habl-
lavar (to wash)	lav-

► Now you know how to find the stem of a verb you can add the correct ending. The one you choose will depend on who or what is doing the action.

☑ Note that as the ending generally makes it clear who is doing the action, you usually don't need to add a subject pronoun such as **yo** (meaning *I*), **tú** (meaning *you*) as well.

⇒ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.

► Here are the present simple endings for regular **-ar** verbs:

Present simple endings	Present simple of hablar	Meaning: to speak
-o	(yo) habl<u>o</u>	I speak
-as	(tú) habl<u>as</u>	you speak
-a	(él/ella) habl<u>a</u>	he/she/it speaks
	(usted) habl<u>a</u>	you speak
-amos	(nosotros/nosotras) habl<u>amos</u>	we speak
-áis	(vosotros/vosotras) habl<u>áis</u>	you speak
-an	(ellos/ellas) habl<u>an</u>	they speak

(ustedes) **hablan**

you speak

- You use the **él/ella** (*third person singular*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names when you are just talking about one person, animal or thing.

Lydia habla inglés.

Lydia speaks English.

Mi profesor me ayuda mucho.

My teacher helps me a lot.

- You use the **ellos/ellas** (*third person plural*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names when you are talking about more than one person, animal or thing.

Lydia y Carlos hablan inglés.

Lydia and Carlos speak English.

Mis profesores me ayudan mucho.

My teachers help me a lot.

- ☑ Note that even though you use the **él/ella** and **ellos/ellas** forms of the verb to talk about things in Spanish, you should **never** include the pronouns **él**, **ella**, **ellos** or **ellas** themselves in the sentence when referring to things.

Funciona bien.

It works well.

Funcionan bien.

They work well.

- ⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

Key points

- ✓ Verbs ending in **-ar** belong to the first conjugation. Regular **-ar** verbs form their present tense stem by losing the **-ar**.
- ✓ The present tense endings for regular **-ar** verbs are: **-o**, **-as**, **-a**, **-amos**, **-áis**, **-an**.
- ✓ You usually don't need to give a pronoun in Spanish as the ending of the verb makes it clear who or what is doing the action.

2 Forming the present simple tense of regular **-er** verbs

- If the infinitive of the Spanish verb ends in **-er**, it means that the verb belongs to the **second conjugation**, for example, **comer**, **depende**.
- The stem of regular **-er** verbs in the present simple tense is formed by taking the **infinitive** and chopping off **-er**.

Infinitive	Stem (without -er)
comer (to eat)	com-
depende (to depend)	depend-

- Now add the correct ending, depending on who or what is doing the action.

☑ Note that as the ending generally makes it clear who is doing the action, you usually don't need to add a subject pronoun such as **yo** (meaning *I*) or **tú** (meaning *you*) as well.

⇒ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.

► Here are the present simple endings for regular **-er** verbs:

Present simple endings	Present simple of comer	Meaning: to eat
-o	(yo) como	I eat
-es	(tú) comes	you eat
-e	(él/ella) come	he/she/it eats
	(usted) come	you eat
-emos	(nosotros/nosotras) comemos	we eat
-éis	(vosotros/vosotras) coméis	you eat
-en	(ellos/ellas) comen	they eat
	(ustedes) comen	you eat

► You use the **él/ella** (*third person singular*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names when you are just talking about one person, animal or thing.

Juan come demasiado.

Juan eats too much.

Mi padre me debe 15 euros.

My father owes me 15 euros.

► You use the **ellos/ellas** (*third person plural*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names when you are talking about more than one person, animal or thing.

Juan y Pedro comen demasiado.

Juan and Pedro eat too much.

Mis padres me deben 15 euros.

My parents owe me 15 euros.

☑ Note that even though you use the **él/ella** and **ellos/ellas** forms of the verb to talk about things in Spanish, you should **never** include the pronouns **él**, **ella**, **ellos** or **ellas** themselves in the sentence when referring to things.

Depende.

It depends.

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

Key points

- ✓ Verbs ending in **-er** belong to the second conjugation. Regular **-er** verbs form their present tense stem by losing the **-er**.
- ✓ The present tense endings for regular **-er** verbs are: **-o**, **-es**, **-e**, **-emos**, **-éis**, **-en**.

✓ You usually don't need to give a pronoun in Spanish as the ending of the verb makes it clear who or what is doing the action.

3 Forming the present simple tense of regular **-ir** verbs

- If the infinitive of the Spanish verb ends in **-ir**, it means that the verb belongs to the third conjugation, for example, **vivir**, **recibir**.
- The stem of regular **-ir** verbs in the present simple tense is formed by taking the infinitive and chopping off **-ir**.

Infinitive	Stem (without -ir)
vivir (to live)	viv-
recibir (to receive, to get)	recib-

- Now add the correct ending depending on who or what is doing the action.

☑ Note that as the ending generally makes it clear who is doing the action, you usually don't need to add a subject pronoun such as **yo** (meaning *I*) or **tú** (meaning *you*) as well.

⇒ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.

- Here are the present simple endings for regular **-ir** verbs:

Present simple endings	Present simple of vivir	Meaning: to live
-o	(yo) vivo	I live
-es	(tú) vives	you live
-e	(él/ella) vive	he/she/it lives
	(usted) vive	you live
-imos	(nosotros/nosotras) vivimos	we live
-ís	(vosotros/vosotras) vivís	you live
-en	(ellos/ellas) viven	they live
	(ustedes) viven	you live

- You use the **él/ella** (*third person singular*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names when you are just talking about one person, animal or thing.

Javier vive aquí.

Javier lives here.

Mi padre recibe muchas cartas.

My father gets a lot of letters.

- You use the **ellos/ellas** (*third person plural*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names, when you are talking about more than one person, animal or thing.

Javier y Antonia viven aquí.

Javier and Antonia live here.

Mis padres reciben muchas cartas.

My parents get a lot of letters.

☑ Note that even though you use the **él/ella** and **ellos/ellas** forms of the verb to talk about things in Spanish, you should **never** include the pronouns **él**, **ella**, **ellos** or **ellas** themselves in the sentence when referring to things.

Ocurrió ayer.

It happened yesterday.

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

Key points

- ✓ Verbs ending in **-ir** belong to the third conjugation. Regular **-ir** verbs form their present tense stem by losing the **-ir**.
- ✓ The present tense endings for regular **-ir** verbs are: **-o, -es, -e, -imos, -ís, -en**.
- ✓ You usually don't need to give a pronoun in Spanish as the ending of the verb makes it clear who or what is doing the action.

4 Forming the present simple tense of less regular verbs

- Many Spanish verbs do not follow the regular patterns shown previously. There are lots of verbs that change their **stem** in the present tense when the stress is on the stem. This means that all forms are affected in the present simple **apart from** the **nosotros** and **vosotros** forms. Such verbs are often called **radical-changing verbs**, meaning root-changing verbs.
- For example, some verbs containing an **-o** in the stem change it to **-ue** in the present simple for all forms **apart from** the **nosotros/nosotras** and **vosotros/vosotras** forms.

	encontrar to find	recordar to remember	poder to be able	dormir to sleep
(yo)	enc <u>uentro</u>	rec <u>uerdo</u>	pu <u>edo</u>	du <u>ermo</u>
(tú)	enc <u>uentras</u>	rec <u>uerdas</u>	pu <u>edes</u>	du <u>ermes</u>
(él/ella/usted)	enc <u>uentra</u>	rec <u>uerda</u>	pu <u>ede</u>	du <u>erme</u>
(nosotros/as)	enc <u>on</u> tramos	rec <u>ord</u> amos	pu <u>ed</u> emos	du <u>orm</u> imos
(vosotros/as)	enc <u>on</u> tráis	rec <u>ord</u> áis	pu <u>ed</u> éis	du <u>orm</u> ís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	enc <u>uentran</u>	rec <u>uerdan</u>	pu <u>eden</u>	du <u>ermen</u>

- Other verbs containing an **-e** in the stem change it to **-ie** for all forms **apart from** the **nosotros/nosotras** and **vosotros/vosotras** forms.

	cerrar to close	pensar to think	entender to understand	perder to lose	preferir to prefer
(yo)	ci <u>er</u> ro	pi <u>en</u> so	enti <u>en</u> do	pi <u>er</u> do	prefi <u>er</u> o
(tú)	ci <u>er</u> ras	pi <u>en</u> sas	enti <u>en</u> des	pi <u>er</u> des	prefi <u>er</u> es
(él/ella/usted)	ci <u>er</u> ra	pi <u>en</u> sa	enti <u>en</u> de	pi <u>er</u> de	prefi <u>er</u> e
(nosotros/as)	ci <u>er</u> ramos	pi <u>en</u> samos	enti <u>en</u> demos	pi <u>er</u> demos	prefi <u>er</u> imos
(vosotros/as)	ci <u>er</u> ráis	pi <u>en</u> sáis	enti <u>en</u> deís	pi <u>er</u> deís	prefi <u>er</u> ís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	ci <u>er</u> ran	pi <u>en</u> san	enti <u>en</u> den	pi <u>er</u> den	prefi <u>er</u> en

- A few **-ir** verbs containing **-e** in the stem change this to **-i** in the present simple for all forms apart from the **nosotros/nosotras** and **vosotros/ vosotras** forms.

	pedir to ask (for)	servir to serve
(yo)	pido	sirvo
(tú)	pides	sirves
(él/ella/usted)	pide	sirve
(nosotros/as)	pedimos	servimos
(vosotros/as)	pedís	servís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	piden	sirven

- If you are not sure whether a Spanish verb belongs to this group of **radical-changing verbs**, you can look up the **Verb Tables** in the supplement.

⇒ For more information on **Spelling**, see page 196.

5 **Forming the present simple tense of common irregular verbs**

- There are many other verbs that do not follow the usual patterns in Spanish. These include some very common and important verbs such as **tener** (meaning *to have*), **hacer** (meaning *to do* or *to make*) and **ir** (meaning *to go*). These verbs are shown in full on the next page.

- Here are the present simple tense endings for **tener**:

	tener	Meaning: to have
(yo)	tengo	I have
(tú)	 tienes	you have
(él/ella/usted)	 tiene	he/she/it has, you have
(nosotros/nosotras)	 tenemos	we have
(vosotros/vosotras)	 tenéis	you have
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	 tienen	they have, you have

Tengo dos hermanas.

I have two sisters.

No **tengo** dinero.

I haven't any money.

¿Cuántos sellos **tienes**?

How many stamps have you got?

Tiene el pelo rubio.

He has blond hair.

- Here are the present simple tense endings for **hacer**:

	hacer	Meaning: to do, to make
(yo)	hago	I do, I make
(tú)	haces	you do, you make

(él/ella/usted)	hace	he/she/it does, he/she/it makes, you do, you make
(nosotros/nosotras)	hacemos	we do, we make
(vosotros/vosotras)	hacéis	you do, you make
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hacen	they do, they make, you do, you make

Hago una tortilla.

I'm making an omelette.

No hago mucho deporte.

I don't do a lot of sport.

¿Qué haces?

What are you doing?

Hace calor.

It's hot.

► Here are the present simple tense endings for **ir**:

	ir	Meaning: to go
(yo)	voy	I go
(tú)	vas	you go
(él/ella/usted)	va	he/she/it goes, you go
(nosotros/nosotras)	vamos	we go
(vosotros/vosotras)	vais	you go
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	van	they go, you go

Voy a Salamanca.

I'm going to Salamanca.

¿Adónde vas?

Where are you going?

No va al colegio.

He doesn't go to school.

No van a vender la casa.

They aren't going to sell the house.

⇨ For other irregular verbs in the present simple tense, see **Verb Tables** in the supplement.

6 How to use the present simple tense in Spanish

► The present simple tense is often used in Spanish in the same way as it is in English, although there are some differences.

► As in English, you use the Spanish present simple to talk about:

- things that are generally true

En verano hace calor.

It's hot in summer.

- things that are true now

Viven en Francia.

They live in France.

- things that happen all the time or at certain intervals or that you do as a habit

Marta lleva gafas.

Marta wears glasses.

Mi tío vende mariscos.

My uncle sells shellfish.

- things that you are planning to do

El domingo jugamos en León.

We're playing in León on Sunday.

Mañana voy a Madrid.

I am going to Madrid tomorrow.

- There are some instances when you would use the present simple in Spanish, but you wouldn't use it in English:

- to talk about current projects and activities that may not actually be going on right at this very minute

Construye una casa.

He's building a house.

- when you use certain time expressions in Spanish, especially **desde** (meaning *since*) and **desde hace** (meaning *for*), to talk about activities and states that started in the past and are still going on now

Jaime vive aquí desde hace dos años.

Jaime has been living here for two years.

Daniel vive aquí desde 1999.

Daniel has lived here since 1999.

Llevo horas esperando aquí.

I've been waiting here for hours.

⇒ For more information on the use of tenses with **desde**, see page 189.

ser and estar

- In Spanish there are two irregular verbs, **ser** and **estar**, that both mean *to be*, although they are used very differently. In the present simple tense, they follow the patterns shown below.

Pronoun	ser	estar	Meaning: <i>to be</i>
(yo)	soy	estoy	I am
(tú)	eres	estás	you are
(él/ella/usted)	es	está	he/she/it is, you are
(nosotros/nosotras)	somos	estamos	we are
(vosotros/vosotras)	sois	estáis	you are
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	son	están	they/you are

- **ser** is used:

- with an adjective when talking about a characteristic or fairly permanent quality, for example, shape, size, height, colour, material, nationality.

Mi hermano es alto.

My brother is tall.

María es inteligente.

María is intelligent.

Es rubia.

She's blonde.

<u>Es</u> muy guapa.	She's very pretty.
<u>Es</u> rojo.	It's red.
<u>Es</u> de algodón.	It's made of cotton.
Sus padres <u>son</u> italianos.	His parents are Italian.
<u>Es</u> joven/viejo.	He's young/old.
<u>Son</u> muy ricos/pobres.	They're very rich/poor.

- with a following noun or pronoun that tells you what someone or something is

Miguel <u>es</u> camarero.	Miguel is a waiter.
<u>Soy</u> yo, Enrique.	It's me, Enrique.
Madrid <u>es</u> la capital de España.	Madrid is the capital of Spain.

- to say that something belongs to someone

La casa <u>es</u> de Javier.	The house belongs to Javier.
<u>Es</u> mío.	It's mine.

- to talk about where someone or something comes from

Yo <u>soy</u> de Escocia.	I'm from Scotland.
Mi mujer <u>es</u> de Granada.	My wife is from Granada.

- to say what time it is or what the date is

<u>Son</u> las tres y media.	It's half past three.
Mañana <u>es</u> sábado.	Tomorrow is Saturday.

- in calculations

Tres y dos <u>son</u> cinco.	Three and two are five.
¿Cuánto <u>es</u>? – <u>Son</u> dos euros.	How much is it? It's two euros.

- when followed by an infinitive

Lo importante <u>es</u> decir la verdad.	The important thing is to tell the truth.
---	---

⇒ For more information on the **Infinitive**, see page 144.

- to describe actions using the passive (for example *they are made, it is sold*)

<u>Son</u> fabricados en España.	They are made in Spain.
---	-------------------------

- to talk about where an event is taking place

La boda **será** en Madrid.

The wedding will be in Madrid.

⇒ For more information on the *Passive*, see page 122.

► **estar** is used:

- to talk about where someone or something (other than an event) is

Estoy en Madrid.

I'm in Madrid.

¿Dónde **está** Burgos?

Where's Burgos?

- with an adjective when there has been a change in the condition of someone or something or to suggest that there is something unexpected about them

El café **está** frío.

The coffee's cold.

¡Qué guapa **estás** con este vestido!

How pretty you look in that dress!

⇒ For more information on *Adjectives*, see page 19.

- with a past participle used as an adjective, to describe the state that something is in

Las tiendas **están** cerradas.

The shops are closed.

No **está** terminado.

It isn't finished.

Está roto.

It's broken.

⇒ For more information on *Past participles*, see page 115.

- when talking about someone's health

¿Cómo **están** ustedes?

How are you?

Estamos todos bien.

We're all well.

- to form continuous tenses such as the present continuous tense

Está comiendo.

He's eating.

Estamos aprendiendo mucho.

We are learning a great deal.

⇒ For more information on the *Present continuous*, see page 84.

► Both **ser** and **estar** can be used with certain adjectives, but the meaning changes depending on which is used.

► Use **ser** to talk about permanent qualities.

Marta **es** muy joven.

Marta is very young.

Es delgado.

He's slim.

Viajar **es** cansado.

Travelling is tiring.

La química **es** aburrida.

Chemistry is boring.

► Use **estar** to talk about temporary states or qualities.

Está muy joven con ese vestido.

She looks very young in that dress.

¡**Estás** muy delgada!

You're looking very slim!

Hoy **estoy** cansado.

I'm tired today.

Estoy aburrido.

I'm bored.

► **ser** is used with adjectives such as **importante** (meaning *important*) and **imposible** (meaning *impossible*) when the subject is *it* in English.

Es muy interesante.

It's very interesting.

Es imposible.

It's impossible.

Es fácil.

It's easy.

► **ser** is used in certain set phrases.

Es igual or **Es** lo mismo.

It's all the same.

Es para ti.

It's for you.

► **estar** is also used in some set phrases.

• **estar de pie**

to be standing

Juan está de pie.

Juan is standing.

• **estar de vacaciones**

to be on holiday

¿**Estás de vacaciones?**

Are you on holiday?

• **estar de viaje**

to be on a trip

Mi padre está de viaje.

My father's on a trip.

• **estar de moda**

to be in fashion

Las pantallas de plasma están de moda.

Plasma screens are in fashion.

• **estar claro**

to be obvious

Está claro que no entiendes.

It's obvious that you don't understand.

Grammar Extra!

Both **ser** and **estar** can be used with past participles.

Use **ser** and the past participle in passive constructions to describe an action.

Son fabricados en España.

They are made in Spain.

Use **estar** and the past participle to describe a state.

Está terminado.

It's finished.

⇒ For more information on **Past participles**, see page 115.

Key points

- ✓ **ser** and **estar** both mean *to be* in English, but are used very differently.
- ✓ **ser** and **estar** are irregular verbs. You have to learn them.
- ✓ Use **ser** with adjectives describing permanent qualities or characteristics; with nouns or pronouns telling you who or what somebody or something is; with time and dates; and to form the passive.
- ✓ Use **estar** to talk about location; health; with adjectives describing a change of state; and with past participles used as adjectives to describe states.
- ✓ **estar** is also used to form present continuous tenses.
- ✓ **ser** and **estar** can sometimes be used with the same adjectives, but the meaning changes depending on which verb is used.
- ✓ **ser** and **estar** are both used in a number of set phrases.

The present continuous tense

- In Spanish, the present continuous tense is used to talk about something that is happening at this very moment.
- The Spanish present continuous tense is formed from the present tense of **estar** and the gerund of the verb. The gerund is the form of the verb that ends in **-ando** (for **-ar** verbs) or **-iendo** (for **-er** and **-ir** verbs) and is the same as the *-ing* form of the verb in English (for example, *walking, swimming*).

Estoy trabajando

I'm working.

No estamos comiendo.

We aren't eating.

¿Estás escribiendo?

Are you writing?

⇒ For more information on **estar** and the **Gerund**, see pages 80 and 125.

- To form the gerund of an **-ar** verb, take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive and add **-ando**:

Infinitive	Meaning	Stem (without -ar)	Gerund	Meaning
hablar	to speak	habl-	hablando	speaking
trabajar	to work	trabaj-	trabajando	working

- To form the gerund of an **-er** or **-ir** verb, take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending of the infinitive and add **-iendo**:

Infinitive	Meaning	Stem (without -er or -ir)	Gerund	Meaning

Infinitive	Meaning	Stem (without -er/-ir)	Gerund	Meaning
comer	to eat	com-	comiendo	eating
escribir	to write	escrib-	escribiendo	writing

Tip

Only use the present continuous to talk about things that are in the middle of happening right now. Use the present simple tense instead to talk about activities which are current but which may not be happening at this minute.

María **trabaja en el hospital.**

María works at the hospital.

⇒ For more information on the **Present simple tense**, see page 72.

Key points

- ✓ Only use the present continuous in Spanish for actions that are happening right now.
- ✓ To form the present continuous tense in Spanish, take the present tense of **estar** and add the gerund of the main verb.

The imperative

What is the imperative?

An **imperative** is a form of the verb used when giving orders and instructions, for example, *Sit down!*; *Don't go!*; *Let's start!*

1 Using the imperative

- In Spanish, the form of the imperative that you use for giving instructions depends on:
 - whether you are telling someone to do something or not to do something
 - whether you are talking to one person or to more than one person
 - whether you are on familiar or more formal terms with the person or people
- These imperative forms correspond to the familiar **tú** and **vosotros/ vosotras** and to the more formal **usted** and **ustedes**, although you don't actually say these pronouns when giving instructions.

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

- There is also a form of the imperative that corresponds to *let's* in English.

2 Forming the imperative: instructions not to do something

- In orders that tell you **NOT** to do something and that have **no** in front of them in Spanish, the imperative forms for **tú**, **usted**, **nosotros/nosotras**, **vosotros/vosotras** and **ustedes** are all taken

from a verb form called the present subjunctive. It's easy to remember because the endings for **-ar** and **-er** verbs are the opposite of what they are in the ordinary present tense.

• For more information on the **Present tense** and the **Subjunctive**, see pages 71 and 134.

- In regular **-ar** verbs, you take off the **-as, -a, -amos, -áis** and **-an** endings of the present tense and replace them with: **-es, -e, -emos, -éis** and **-en**.

-ar verb	trabajar	to work
tú form	¡no trabajes!	Don't work!
usted form	¡no trabaje!	Don't work!
nosotros/as form	¡no trabajemos!	Let's not work!
vosotros/as form	¡no trabajéis!	Don't work!
ustedes form	¡no trabajen!	Don't work!

- In regular **-er** verbs, you take off the **-es, -e, -emos, -éis** and **-en** endings of the present tense and replace them with **-as, -a, -amos, -áis** and **-an**.

-er verb	comer	to eat
tú form	¡no comas!	Don't eat!
usted form	¡no coma!	Don't eat!
nosotros/as form	¡no comamos!	Let's not eat!
vosotros/as form	¡no comáis!	Don't eat!
ustedes form	¡no coman!	Don't eat!

- In regular **-ir** verbs, you take off the **-es, -e, -imos, -ís** and **-en** endings of the present tense and replace them with **-as, -a, -amos, -áis** and **-an**.

-ir verb	decidir	to decide
tú form	¡no decidas!	Don't decide!
usted form	¡no decida!	Don't decide!
nosotros/as form	¡no decidamos!	Let's not decide!
vosotros/as form	¡no decidáis!	Don't decide!
ustedes form	¡no decidan!	Don't decide!

- A number of irregular verbs also have irregular imperative forms. These are shown in the table below.

	dar to give	decir to say	estar to be	hacer to do/make	ir to go
tú form	¡no des! don't give!	¡no digas! don't say!	¡no estés! don't be!	¡no hagas! don't do/make!	¡no vayas! don't go!
usted form	¡no dé! don't give!	¡no diga! don't say!	¡no esté! don't be!	¡no haga! don't do/make!	¡no vaya! don't go!

nosotros form	¡no demos! let's not give!	¡no digamos! let's not say!	¡no estemos! let's not be!	¡no hagamos! let's not do/make!	¡no vayamos! let's not go!
vosotros form	¡no deis! don't give!	¡no digáis! don't say!	¡no estéis! don't be!	¡no hagáis! don't do/make!	¡no vayáis! don't go!
ustedes form	¡no den! don't give!	¡no digan! don't say!	¡no estén! don't be!	¡no hagan! don't do/make!	¡no vayan! don't go!

	poner to put	salir to leave	ser to be	tener to have	venir to come
tú form	¡no pongas! don't put!	¡no salgas! don't leave!	¡no seas! don't be!	¡no tengas! don't have!	¡no vengas! don't come!
usted form	¡no ponga! don't put!	¡no salga! don't leave!	¡no sea! don't be!	¡no tenga! don't have!	¡no venga! don't come!
nosotros form	¡no pongamos! let's not put!	¡no salgamos! let's not leave!	¡no seamos! let's not be!	¡no tengamos! let's not have!	¡no vengamos! let's not come!
vosotros form	¡no pongáis! don't put!	¡no salgáis! don't leave!	¡no seáis! don't be!	¡no tengáis! don't have!	¡no vengáis! don't come!
ustedes form	¡no pongan! don't put!	¡no salgan! don't leave!	¡no sean! don't be!	¡no tengan! don't have!	¡no vengan! don't come!

☑ Note that if you take the **yo** form of the present tense, take off the **-o** and add the endings to this instead for instructions **NOT TO do** something, some of these irregular forms will be more predictable.

digo	<i>I say</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	dig-
hago	<i>I do</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	hag-
pongo	<i>I put</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	pong-
salgo	<i>I leave</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	salg-
tengo	<i>I have</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	teng-
vengo	<i>I come</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	veng-

3 **Forming the imperative: instructions to do something**

► In instructions telling you **TO DO** something, the forms for **usted**, **nosotros** and **ustedes** are exactly the same as they are in negative instructions (instructions telling you not to do something) except that there isn't a **no**.

	trabajar to work	comer to eat	decidir to decide
usted form	¡Trabaje!	¡Coma!	¡Decida!
nosotros/as form	¡Trabajemos!	¡Comamos!	¡Decidamos!
ustedes form	¡Trabajen!	¡Coman!	¡Decidan!

► There are special forms of the imperative for **tú** and **vosotros/vosotras** in positive instructions (instructions telling you to do something).

► The **tú** form of the imperative is the same as the **tú** form of the ordinary present simple tense, but without the final **-s**.

trabajar	→	¡Trabaja!
to work		Work!
comer	→	¡Come!
to eat		Eat!

decidir → **¡Decide!**
to decide → Decide!

⇒ For more information on the **Present simple tense**, see page 72.

► The **vosotros/vosotras** form of the imperative is the same as the infinitive, except that you take off the final **-r** and add **-d** instead.

trabajar → **Trabaja!**
to work → Work!

comer → **Comed!**
to eat → Eat!

decidir → **Decidid!**
to decide → Decide!

► There are a number of imperative forms that are irregular in Spanish. The irregular imperative forms for **usted**, **nosotros/nosotras** and **ustedes** are the same as the irregular negative imperative forms without the **no**. The **tú** and **vosotros/vosotras** forms are different again.

	dar to give	decir to say	estar to be	hacer to do/make	ir to go
tú form	¡da! give!	¡di! say!	¡está! be!	¡haz! do/make!	¡ve! go!
usted form	¡dé! give!	¡diga! say!	¡esté! be!	¡haga! do/make!	¡vaya! go!
nosotros/as form	¡demos! let's give!	¡digamos! let's say!	¡estemos! let's be!	¡hagamos! let's do/make!	¡vamos! let's go!
vosotros/as form	¡dad! give!	¡decid! say!	¡estad! be!	¡haced! do/make!	¡id! go!
ustedes form	¡den! give!	¡digan! say!	¡estén! be!	¡hagan! do/make!	¡vayan! go!

	poner to put	salir to leave	ser to be	tener to have	venir to come
tú form	¡pon! put!	¡sal! leave!	¡sé! be!	¡ten! have!	¡ven! come!
usted form	¡ponga! put!	¡salga! leave!	¡sea! be!	¡tenga! have!	¡venga! come!
nosotros/as form	¡pongamos! let's put!	¡salgamos! let's leave!	¡seamos! let's be!	¡tengamos! let's have!	¡vengamos! let's come!
vosotros/as form	¡poned! put!	¡salid! leave!	¡sed! be!	¡tened! have!	¡venid! come!
ustedes form	¡pongan! put!	¡salgan! leave!	¡sean! be!	¡tingan! have!	¡vengan! come!

☑ Note that the **nosotros/as** form for **ir** in instructions TO DO something is **vamos**; in instructions NOT TO DO something, it is **no vayamos**.

4 **Position of object pronouns**

► An object pronoun is a word like **me** (meaning *me* or *to me*), **la** (meaning *her/it*) or **les** (meaning *to them/to you*) that is used instead of a noun as the object of a sentence. In orders and instructions, the

position of these object pronouns in the sentence changes depending on whether you are telling someone TO DO something or NOT TO DO something.

⇒ For more information on **Object pronouns**, see page 46.

► If you are telling someone NOT TO DO something, the object pronouns go BEFORE the verb.

<u>iNo me lo mandes!</u>	Don't send it to me!
<u>iNo me molestes!</u>	Don't disturb me!
<u>iNo los castigue!</u>	Don't punish them!
<u>iNo se la devolvamos!</u>	Let's not give it back to him/her/them!
<u>iNo las contestéis!</u>	Don't answer them!

► If you are telling someone TO DO something, the object pronouns join on to the end of the verb. An accent is usually added to make sure that the stress in the imperative verb stays the same.

<u>iExplicámelo!</u>	Explain it to me!
<u>iPerdóneme!</u>	Excuse me!
<u>iDígame!</u>	Tell me!
<u>iEsperémosla!</u>	Let's wait for her/it!

☑ Note that when there are two object pronouns, the indirect object pronoun always goes before the direct object pronoun.

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

5 **Other ways of giving instructions**

► For general instructions in instruction leaflets, recipes and so on, use the infinitive form instead of the imperative.

Ver página 9. see page 9.

► **vamos a** with the infinitive is often used to mean *let's*.

<u>Vamos a ver.</u>	Let's see.
<u>Vamos a empezar.</u>	Let's start.

Key points

- ✓ In Spanish, in instructions not to do something, the endings are taken from the present subjunctive. They are the same as the corresponding endings for **-ar** and **-er** verbs in the ordinary present tense, except that the **-e** endings go on the **-ar** verbs and the **-a** endings go on the **-er** and **-ir** verbs.

- ✓ For **-ar** verbs, the forms are: **no hables** (tú form); **no hable** (usted form); **no hablemos** (nosotros/as form); **no habléis** (vosotros/as form); **no hablen** (ustedes form).
- ✓ For **-er** verbs, the forms are: **no comas** (tú form); **no coma** (usted form); **no comamos** (nosotros/as form); **no comáis** (vosotros/as form); **no coman** (ustedes form).
- ✓ For **-ir** verbs, the forms are: **no decidas** (tú form); **no decida** (usted form); **no decidamos** (nosotros/as form); **no decidáis** (vosotros/as form); **no decidan** (ustedes form).
- ✓ In instructions to do something, the forms for **usted**, **nosotros/as** and **ustedes** are the same as they are in instructions not to do something.
- ✓ The forms for **tú** and **vosotros/as** are different:
 - the **tú** form is the same as the corresponding form in the ordinary present tense, but without the final **-s**: **trabaja**; **come**; **decide**
 - the **vosotros/as** form is the same as the infinitive but with a final **-d** instead of the **-r**: **trabajad**; **comed**; **decidid**
- ✓ A number of verbs have irregular imperative forms.
- ✓ The object pronouns in imperatives go before the verb when telling someone not to do something; they join onto the end of the verb when telling someone to do something.

Reflexive verbs

What is a reflexive verb?

A **reflexive verb** is one where the subject and object are the same, and where the action 'reflects back' on the subject. It is used with a reflexive pronoun such as *myself*, *yourself* and *herself* in English, for example, *I washed myself*; *He shaved himself*.

1 Using reflexive verbs

- In Spanish, reflexive verbs are much more common than in English, and many are used in everyday language. The infinitive form of a reflexive verb has **se** attached to the end of it, for example, **secarse** (meaning *to dry oneself*). This is the way reflexive verbs are shown in dictionaries. **se** means *himself*, *herself*, *itself*, *yourself*, *themselves*, *yourselves* and *oneself*. **se** is called a reflexive pronoun.
- In Spanish, reflexive verbs are often used to describe things you do to yourself every day or that involve a change of some sort, for example, going to bed, sitting down, getting angry, and so on. Some of the most common reflexive verbs in Spanish are listed here.

acostarse	to go to bed
afeitarse	to shave
bañarse	to have a bath, to have a swim

dormirse	to go to sleep
ducharse	to have a shower
enfadarse	to get angry
lavarse	to wash
levantarse	to get up
llamarse	to be called
secarse	to get dried
sentarse	to sit down
vestirse	to get dressed
<u>Me baño a las siete y media.</u>	I have a bath at half past seven.
<u>¡Duérmete!</u>	Go to sleep!
<u>Mi hermana se ducha.</u>	My sister has a shower.
<u>Mi madre se enfada mucho.</u>	My mother often gets angry.
<u>Mi hermano no se lava.</u>	My brother doesn't wash.
<u>Me levanto a las siete.</u>	I get up at seven o'clock.
<u>¿Cómo te llamas?</u>	What's your name?
<u>¿A qué hora os acostáis?</u>	What time do you go to bed?
<u>¡Sentaos!</u>	Sit down!
<u>Nos vestimos.</u>	We're getting dressed.

☑ Note that **se**, **me** and so on are very rarely translated as *himself*, *myself* and so on in English. Instead of *he dresses himself* or *they bath themselves*, in English, we are more likely to say *he gets dressed* or *they have a bath*.

► Some Spanish verbs can be used both as reflexive verbs and as ordinary verbs (without the reflexive pronoun). When they are used as ordinary verbs, the person or thing doing the action is not the same as the person or thing receiving the action, so the meaning is different.

<u>Me lavo.</u>	I wash (myself).
<u>Lavo la ropa a mano.</u>	I wash the clothes by hand.
<u>Me llamo Antonio.</u>	I'm called Antonio.
<u>¡Llama a la policía!</u>	Call the police!
<u>Me acuesto a las 11.</u>	I go to bed at 11 o'clock.
<u>Acuesta al niño.</u>	He puts the child to bed.

Grammar Extra!

Some verbs mean almost the same in the reflexive as when they are used on their own.

<u>Duermo.</u>	I sleep.
<u>Me duermo.</u>	I go to sleep.
<u>¿Quieres ir al cine?</u>	Do you want to go to the cinema?
<u>Acaba de irse.</u>	He has just left.

2 **Forming the present tense of reflexive verbs**

► To use a reflexive verb in Spanish, you need to decide which reflexive pronoun to use. See how the reflexive pronouns in the table on the next page correspond to the subject pronouns.

Subject pronoun	Reflexive pronoun	Meaning
(yo)	me	myself
(tú)	te	yourself
(él) (ella) (uno)	se	himself herself oneself itself yourself
(usted)		
(nosotros/nosotras)	nos	ourselves
(vosotros/vosotras)	os	yourselves
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	se	themselves yourselves

(Yo) <u>me</u> levanto temprano.	I get up early.
(Él) <u>se</u> acuesta a las once.	He goes to bed at eleven.
Ellos <u>no se</u> afeitan.	They don't shave.

► The present tense forms of a reflexive verb work in just the same way as an ordinary verb, except that the reflexive pronoun is used as well.

⇨ For more information on the **Present tense**, see page 71.

► The following table shows the reflexive verb **lavarse** in full.

Reflexive forms of lavarse	Meaning
(yo) me lavo	I wash (myself)
(tú) te lavas	you wash (yourself)
(él) se lava (ella) se lava	he washes (himself) she washes (herself)

(uno) se lava	one washes (oneself)
se lava	it washes (itself)
(usted) se lava	you wash (yourself)
(nosotros/nosotras) nos lavamos	we wash (ourselves)
(vosotros/vosotras) os laváis	you wash (yourselves)
(ellos) se lavan	they wash (themselves)
(ellas) se lavan	they wash (themselves)
(ustedes) se lavan	you wash (yourselves)

► Some reflexive verbs, such as **acostarse**, are irregular. Some of these irregular verbs are shown in the **Verb tables** in the supplement.

3 Position of reflexive pronouns

► In ordinary tenses such as the present simple, the reflexive pronoun goes **before** the verb.

Me acuesto temprano.

I go to bed early.

¿Cómo **se** llama usted?

What's your name?

⇨ For more information on the **Present simple tense**, see page 72.

► When telling someone **NOT TO DO** something, you also put the reflexive pronoun **BEFORE** the verb.

No **te** levantes.

Don't get up.

¡No **os** vayáis!

Don't leave!

► When telling someone **TO DO** something, you join the reflexive pronoun onto the end of the verb.

¡**Siéntense!**

Sit down!

¡**Cállate!**

Be quiet!

⇨ For more information on the **Imperative**, see page 85.

Tip

When adding reflexive pronouns to the end of the imperative, you drop the final **-s** of the **nosotros** form and the final **-d** of the **vosotros** form, before the pronoun.

¡**Vámonos!**

Let's go!

¡**Sentaos!**

Sit down!

► You always join the reflexive pronoun onto the end of infinitives and gerunds (the **-ando** or **-iendo** forms of the verb) unless the infinitive or gerund follows another verb.

Hay que relajarse de vez en cuando.

You have to relax from time to time.

Acostándose temprano, se descansa mejor.

You feel more rested if you go to bed early.

- Where the infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can put the reflexive pronoun either at the end of the infinitive or gerund or before the other verb.

Quiero bañarme or Me quiero bañar.

I want to have a bath.

Tienes que vestirte or Te tienes que vestir.

You must get dressed.

Está vistiéndose or Se está vistiendo.

She's getting dressed.

¿Estás duchándote? or ¿Te estás duchando?

Are you having a shower?

⇒ For more information on **Gerunds**, see page 125.

☑ Note that, when adding pronouns to the ends of verb forms, you will often have to add a written accent to preserve the stress.

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

4 Using reflexive verbs with parts of the body and clothes

- In Spanish, you often talk about actions to do with your body or your clothing using a reflexive verb.

Se está secando el pelo.

She's drying her hair.

Nos lavamos los dientes.

We clean our teeth.

Se está poniendo el abrigo.

He's putting on his coat.

☑ Note that in Spanish you do not use a possessive adjective such as *my* and *her* when talking about parts of the body. You use **el, la, los** and **las** with a reflexive verb instead.

Me estoy lavando las manos.

I'm washing my hands.

⇒ For more information on **Articles**, see page 10.

5 Other uses of reflexive verbs

- In English we often use a passive construction, for example, *goods are transported all over the world, most of our tea is imported from India and China*. In Spanish, this construction is not used so much. Instead, very often a reflexive verb with **se** is used.

Aquí se vende café.

Coffee is sold here.

Aquí se venden muchos libros.

Lots of books are sold here.

Se habla inglés.

English is spoken here.

En Suiza se hablan tres idiomas.

Three languages are spoken in Switzerland.

☑ Note that the verb has to be singular or plural depending on whether the noun is singular or plural.

⇒ For more information on the **Passive**, see page 122.

► A reflexive verb with **se** is also used in some very common expressions.

¿Cómo **se dice** “siesta” en inglés?

How do you say “siesta” in English?

¿Cómo **se escribe** “Tarragona”?

How do you spell “Tarragona”?

► **se** is also used in impersonal expressions. In this case, it often corresponds to *one* (or *you*) in English.

No **se puede** entrar.

You can't go in.

No **se permite**.

You aren't or It isn't allowed.

⇨ For more information on **Impersonal verbs**, see page 129.

► **nos**, **os** and **se** are all also used to mean *each other* and *one another*.

Nos escribimos.

We write to one another.

Nos queremos.

We love each other.

Rachel y Julie **se** odian.

Rachel and Julie hate each other.

No **se** conocen.

They don't know each other.

Key points

- ✓ A reflexive verb is made up of a reflexive pronoun and a verb.
- ✓ The reflexive pronouns are: **me**, **te**, **se**, **nos**, **os**, **se**.
- ✓ The reflexive pronoun goes before the verb, except when you are telling someone to do something and with infinitives and gerunds.

The future tense

What is the future tense?

The **future** tense is a verb tense used to talk about something that will happen or will be true in the future, for example, *He'll be here soon; I'll give you a call; What will you do?; It will be sunny tomorrow.*

1 Ways of talking about the future

► In Spanish, just as in English, you can often use the present tense to refer to something that is going to happen in the future.

Cogemos el tren de las once.

We're **getting** the eleven o'clock train.

Mañana **voy** a Madrid.

I **am going** to Madrid tomorrow.

► In English we often use *going to* with an infinitive to talk about the immediate future or our future plans. In Spanish, you can use the present tense of **ir** followed by **a** and an infinitive.

Va a perder el tren.

He's going to miss the train.

Va a llevar una media hora.

It's going to take about half an hour.

Voy a hacerlo mañana.

I'm going to do it tomorrow.

2 **Forming the future tense**

- In English we can form the future tense by putting *will* or its shortened form *'ll* before the verb. In Spanish you have to change the verb endings. So, just as **hablo** means *I speak*, **hablaré** means *I will speak* or *I shall speak*.
- To form the future tense of regular **-ar**, **-er** and **-ir** verbs, add the following endings to the infinitive of the verb: **-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án**.
- The following table shows the future tense of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	hablaré	comeré	viviré	I'll speak/eat/live
(tú)	hablarás	comerás	vivirás	you'll speak/eat/live
(él) (ella) (usted)	hablará	comerá	vivirá	he'll speak/eat/live she'll speak/eat/live it'll speak/eat/live you'll speak/eat/live
(nosotros/nosotras)	hablaremos	comeremos	viviremos	we'll speak/eat/live
(vosotros/vosotras)	hablaréis	comeréis	viviréis	you'll speak/eat/live
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablarán	comerán	vivirán	they'll/you'll speak/eat/live

Hablaré con ella.

I'll speak to her.

Comeremos en casa de José.

We'll eat at José's.

No volverá.

He won't come back.

¿Lo entenderás?

Will you understand it?

☑ Note that in the future tense only the **nosotros/nosotras** form doesn't have an accent.

Tip

Remember that Spanish has no direct equivalent of the word *will* in verb forms like *will rain* or *will look* and so on. You change the Spanish verb ending instead to form the future tense.

Grammar Extra!

In English, we sometimes use *will* with the meaning of *be willing to* rather than simply to express the future, for example, *Will you wait for me a moment?* In Spanish you don't use the future tense to say this; you use the verb **querer** (meaning *to want*) instead.

¿Me quieres esperar un momento, por favor?

Will you wait for me a moment, please?

3 Verbs with irregular stems in the future tense

► There are a few verbs that do not use their infinitives as the stem for the future tense. Here are some of the most common.

Verb	Stem	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (usted)
decir to say	dir-	diré	dirás	dirá	diremos	diréis	dirán
haber to have	habr-	habré	habrás	habrá	habremos	habréis	habrán
hacer to do/make	har-	haré	harás	hará	haremos	haréis	harán
poder	podr-	podré	podrás	podrá	podremos	podréis	podrán

to be able to							
poner to put	pondr-	pondré	pondrás	pondrá	pondremos	pondréis	pondrán
querer to want	querr-	querré	querrás	querrá	querremos	querréis	querrán
saber to know	sabr-	sabré	sabrás	sabrá	sabremos	sabréis	sabrán
salir to leave	saldr-	saldré	saldrás	saldrá	saldremos	saldréis	saldrán
tener to have	tendr-	tendré	tendrás	tendrá	tendremos	tendréis	tendrán
venir to come	vendr-	vendré	vendrás	vendrá	vendremos	vendréis	vendrán

Lo **haré** mañana.

I'll do it tomorrow.

No **podremos** hacerlo.

We won't be able to do it.

Lo **pondré** aquí.

I'll put it here.

Saldrán por la mañana.

They'll leave in the morning.

¿A qué hora **vendrás**?

What time will you come?

☑ Note that the verb **haber** is only used when forming other tenses, such as the perfect tense, and in the expression **hay** (meaning *there is* or *there are*).

⇒ For more information on the *Perfect tense* and on **hay**, see pages **115** and **130**.

4 **Reflexive verbs in the future tense**

► The future tense of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me**, **te**, **se**, **nos**, **os**, **se**).

Me levantaré temprano.

I'll get up early.

Key points

- ✓ You can use a present tense in Spanish to talk about something that will happen or be true, just as in English.
- ✓ You can use **ir a** with an infinitive to talk about things that will happen in the immediate future.
- ✓ In Spanish there is no direct equivalent of the word *will* in verb forms like *will rain* and *will look*. You change the verb endings instead.
- ✓ To form the future tense, add the endings **-é, -ás, á, -emos, -éis, -án** to the infinitive.
- ✓ Some verbs have irregular stems in the future tense. It is worth learning these.

The conditional

What is the conditional?

The **conditional** is a verb form used to talk about things that would happen or that would be true under certain conditions, for example, I would help you if I could.

It is also used to say what you would like or need, for example, Could you give me the bill?

1 Using the conditional

- You can often recognize a conditional in English by the word *would* or its shortened form *'d*.

I would be sad if you left.

If you asked him, he'd help you.

- You use the conditional for:

- saying what you would like to do

Me gustaría conocerlo.

I'd like to meet him.

- making suggestions

Podrías alquilar una bici.

You could hire a bike.

- giving advice

Deberías hacer más ejercicio.

You should do more exercise.

- saying what you would do

Le dije que le ayudaría.

I said I would help him.

Tip

There is no direct Spanish translation of *would* in verb forms like *would be*, *would like*, *would help* and so on. You change the Spanish verb ending instead.

2 Forming the conditional

- To form the conditional of regular **-ar**, **-er**, and **-ir** verbs, add the following endings to the infinitive of the verb: **-ía**, **-ías**, **-ía**, **-íamos**, **-íais**, **-ían**.
- The following table shows the conditional tense of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	hablaría	comería	viviría	I would speak/eat/li
(tú)	hablarías	comerías	vivirías	you would speak/eat/li
(él) (ella) (usted)	hablaría	comería	viviría	he would speak/eat/li she would speak/eat/li it would speak/eat/li you would speak/eat/li
(nosotros/nosotras)	hablaríamos	comeríamos	viviríamos	we would speak/eat/li
(vosotros/vosotras)	hablaríais	comeríais	viviríais	you would speak/eat/li
(ellos/ellas) (ustedes)	hablarían	comerían	vivirían	they would speak/eat/li you would speak/eat/li

Me **gustaría** ir a China.

I'd like to go to China.

Dije que hablaría con ella.

I said that I would speak to her.

Debería llamar a mis padres.

I should ring my parents.

Tip

Don't forget to put an accent on the **í** in the conditional.

☑ Note that the endings in the conditional tense are identical to those of the imperfect tense for **-er** and **-ir** verbs. The only difference is that they are added to a different stem.

➔ For more information on the **Imperfect tense**, see page 110.

3 Verbs with irregular stems in the conditional

► To form the conditional of irregular verbs, use the same stem as for the future tense, then add the usual endings for the conditional. The same verbs that are irregular in the future tense are irregular in the conditional.

Verb	Stem	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
decir to say	dir-	diría	dirías	diría	diríamos	diríais	dirían
haber to have	habr-	habría	habrías	habría	habríamos	habríais	habrían
hacer to do/ make	har-	haría	harías	haría	haríamos	haríais	harían
poder to be able to	podr-	podría	podrías	podría	podríamos	podríais	podrían
poner	pondr-	pondría	pondrías	pondría	pondríamos	pondríais	pondrían

to put							
querer to want	querr-	quer <u>r</u> ía	quer <u>r</u> ías	quer <u>r</u> ía	quer <u>r</u> íamos	quer <u>r</u> íais	quer
saber to know	sabr-	sabr <u>a</u> ía	sabr <u>a</u> ías	sabr <u>a</u> ía	sabr <u>a</u> íamos	sabr <u>a</u> íais	sabr <u>i</u>
salir to leave	saldr-	saldr <u>a</u> ía	saldr <u>a</u> ías	saldr <u>a</u> ía	saldr <u>a</u> íamos	saldr <u>a</u> íais	saldr
tener to have	tendr-	tendr <u>a</u> ía	tendr <u>a</u> ías	tendr <u>a</u> ía	tendr <u>a</u> íamos	tendr <u>a</u> íais	tendr
venir to come	vendr-	vendr <u>a</u> ía	vendr <u>a</u> ías	vendr <u>a</u> ía	vendr <u>a</u> íamos	vendr <u>a</u> íais	vendr

⇒ For more information on the **Future tense**, see page 97.

¿Qué harías tú en mi lugar?

What would you do if you were me?

¿Podrías ayudarme?

Could you help me?

Yo lo pondría aquí.

I would put it here.

☑ Note that the verb **haber** is only used when forming other tenses, such as the perfect tense, and in the expression **hay** (meaning *there is/there are*).

⇒ For more information on the **Perfect tense** and on **hay**, see pages 115 and 130.

4 Reflexive verbs in the conditional

► The conditional of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**).

Le dije que me levantaría temprano.

I told him I would get up early.

Key points

- ✓ In Spanish, there is no direct equivalent of the word *would* in verb forms like *would go* and *would look* and so on. You change the verb ending instead.
- ✓ To form the conditional tense, add the endings **-ía, ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían** to the infinitive. The conditional uses the same stem as for the future.
- ✓ Some verbs have irregular stems which are used for both the conditional and the future. It is worth learning these.

The preterite

What is the preterite?

The **preterite** is a form of the verb that is used to talk about actions that were completed in the past in Spanish. It often corresponds to the simple past in English, as in *I bought a new bike; Mary went to the shops on Friday; I typed two reports yesterday.*

1 Using the preterite

► In English, we use the simple past tense to talk about actions:

- that were completed at a certain point in the past
I bought a dress yesterday.
- that were part of a series of events
I went to the beach, undressed and put on my swimsuit.
- that went on for a certain amount of time
The war lasted three years.

► In English, we also use the simple past tense to describe actions which happened frequently (*Our parents took us swimming in the holidays*), and to describe settings (*It was a dark and stormy night*).

► In Spanish, the preterite is the most common tense for talking about the past. You use the preterite for actions:

- that were completed at a certain point in the past

Ayer compré un vestido.

I bought a dress yesterday.

- that were part of a series of events

Fui a la playa, me quité la ropa y me puse el bañador.

I went to the beach, undressed and put on my swimsuit.

- that went on for a certain amount of time

La guerra duró tres años.

The war lasted three years.

► However, you use the imperfect tense for actions that happened frequently (where you could use *used to* in English) and for descriptions of settings.

⇒ For more information on the *Imperfect tense*, see page 110.

2 Forming the preterite of regular verbs

- To form the preterite of any regular **-ar** verb, you take off the **-ar** ending to form the stem, and add the endings: **-é, -aste, -ó, -amos, -asteis, -aron**.
- To form the preterite of any regular **-er** or **-ir** verb, you also take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending to form the stem and add the endings: **-í, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, -ieron**.
- The following table shows the preterite of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	hablé	comí	viví	I spoke/ate/lived
(tú)	hablaste	comiste	viviste	you spoke/ate/lived
(él) (ella) (usted)	habló	comió	vivió	he spoke/ate/lived she spoke/ate/lived it spoke/ate/lived you spoke/ate/lived
(nosotros/nosotras)	hablamos	comimos	vivimos	we spoke/ate/lived
(vosotros/vosotras)	hablasteis	comisteis	vivisteis	you spoke/ate/lived
(ellos/ellas) (ustedes)	hablaron	comieron	vivieron	they spoke/ate/lived you spoke/ate/lived

Bailé con mi hermana.

I danced with my sister.

No hablé con ella.

I didn't speak to her.

Comimos en un restaurante.

We had lunch in a restaurant.

¿Cerraste la ventana?

Did you close the window?

☑ Note that Spanish has no direct translation of *did* or *didn't* in questions or negative sentences. You simply use a past tense and make it a question by making your voice go up at the end or changing the word order; you make it negative by adding **no**.

⇒ For more information on *Questions and Negatives*, see pages 160 and 157.

Tip

Remember the accents on the **yo** and **él/ella/usted** forms of regular verbs in the preterite. Only an accent shows the difference, for example, between **hablo** *I speak* and **habló** *he spoke*.

3 Irregular verbs in the preterite

► A number of verbs have very irregular forms in the preterite. The table shows some of the most common.

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
andar to walk	anduve	anduviste	anduvo	anduvimos	anduvisteis	anduvieron
conducir to drive	conduje	condujiste	condujo	condujimos	condujisteis	condujeron
dar to give	di	diste	dio	dimos	disteis	dieron
decir to say	dije	dijiste	dijo	dijimos	dijisteis	dijeron
estar to be	estuve	estuviste	estuvo	estuvimos	estuvisteis	estuvieron
hacer to do, to make	hice	hiciste	hizo	hicimos	hicisteis	hicieron
ir to go	fui	fuiste	fue	fuimos	fuisteis	fueron
poder to be able to	pude	podiste	pudo	podimos	podisteis	podieron
poner to put	puse	pusiste	puso	pusimos	pusisteis	pusieron
querer to want	quise	quisiste	quiso	quisimos	quisisteis	quisieron

saber to know	supe	supiste	supo	supimos	supisteis	supieron
ser to be	fui	fuiste	fue	fuimos	fuisteis	fueron
tener to have	tuve	tuviste	tuvo	tuvimos	tuvisteis	tuvieron
traer to bring	traje	trajiste	trajo	trajimos	trajisteis	trajeron
venir to come	vine	viniste	vino	vinimos	vinisteis	vinieron
ver to see	vi	viste	vio	vimos	visteis	vieron

☑ Note that **hizo** (the **él/ella/usted** form of **hacer**) is spelt with a **z**.

➔ For more information on **Spelling**, see page 196.

Fue a Madrid.

He went to Madrid.

Te **vi** en el parque.

I saw you in the park.

No **vinieron**.

They didn't come.

¿Qué **hizo**?

What did she do?

Se lo **di** a Teresa.

I gave it to Teresa.

Fue en 1999.

It was in 1999.

Tip

The preterite forms of **ser** (meaning *to be*) are the same as the preterite forms of **ir** (meaning *to go*).

► Some other verbs are regular except for the **él/ella/usted** and **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms (*third persons singular and plural*). In these forms the stem vowel changes.

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas)
-------------	------	------	----------------	--------------------------	--------------------------	--------------------

			(usted)			(ustedes)
dormir to sleep	dormí	dormiste	durmió	dormimos	dormisteis	durmieron
morir to die	morí	moriste	murió	morimos	moristeis	murieron
pedir to ask for	pedí	pediste	pidió	pedimos	pedisteis	pidieron
reír to laugh	reí	reíste	rió	reímos	reísteis	rieron
seguir to follow	seguí	seguiste	siguió	seguimos	seguisteis	siguieron
sentir to feel	sentí	sentiste	sintió	sentimos	sentisteis	sintieron

☑ Note that **reír** also has an accent in all persons apart from the **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms.

Antonio **durmió** diez horas.

Antonio slept for ten hours.

Murió en 1066.

He died in 1066.

Pidió paella.

He asked for paella.

¿Los **siguió**?

Did she follow them?

Sintió un dolor en la pierna.

He felt a pain in his leg.

Nos **reímos** mucho.

We laughed a lot.

Juan no se **rió**.

Juan didn't laugh.

► **caer** (meaning *to fall*) and **leer** (meaning *to read*) have an accent in all persons apart from the **ellos/ellas/ustedes** form (*third person plural*). In addition, the vowel changes to **y** in the **él/ella/usted** and **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms (*third persons singular and plural*).

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(e) (e) (u)

caer to fall	caí	caíste	cayó	caímos	caísteis	ca
construir to build	construí	construiste	construyó	construimos	construisteis	cc
leer to read	leí	leíste	leyó	leímos	leísteis	le

☑ Note that **construir** also changes to **y** in the **él/ella/usted** and **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms (*third persons singular and plural*), but only has accents in the **yo** and **él/ella/usted** forms.

Se **cayó** por la ventana.

He fell out of the window.

Ayer **leí** un artículo muy interesante.

I read a very interesting article yesterday.

Construyeron una nueva autopista.

They built a new motorway.

4 Other spelling changes in the preterite

► Spanish verbs that end in **-zar**, **-gar** and **-car** in the infinitive change the **z** to **c**, the **g** to **gu** and the **c** to **qu** in the **yo** form (*first person singular*).

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
cruzar to cross	cru<u>c</u>é	cruzaste	cruzó	cruzamos	cruzasteis	cruzaron
empezar to begin	empe<u>z</u>é	empezaste	empezó	empezamos	empezasteis	empezaron
pagar to pay for	pagu<u>e</u>é	pagaste	pagó	pagamos	pagasteis	pagaron
sacar to follow	sacu<u>q</u>é	sacaste	sacó	sacamos	sacasteis	sacaron

Crucé el río.

I crossed the river.

Empezé a hacer mis deberes.

I began doing my homework.

No **pagué** la cuenta.

I didn't pay the bill.

Me **saqué** las llaves del bolsillo.

I took my keys out of my pocket.

☑ Note that the change from **g** to **gu** and **c** to **qu** before **e** is to keep the sound hard.

⇒ For more information on *Spelling*, see page 196.

5 Reflexive verbs in the preterite

► The preterite of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**).

Me **levanté** a las siete.

I got up at seven.

Key points

- ✓ The preterite is the most common way to talk about the past in Spanish.
- ✓ To form the preterite of regular **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending and add the endings: **-é, -aste, -ó, -amos, -asteis, -aron**.
- ✓ To form the preterite of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** and **-ir** endings and add the endings: **-í, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, -ieron**.
- ✓ There are a number of verbs which are irregular in the preterite. These forms have to be learnt.
- ✓ With some verbs, the accents and spelling change in certain forms.

The imperfect tense

What is the imperfect tense?

The **imperfect tense** is one of the verb tenses used to talk about the past, especially in descriptions, and to say what was happening or used to happen, for example, *It was sunny at the weekend; We were living in Spain at the time; I used to walk to school.*

1 Using the imperfect tense

► In Spanish, the imperfect tense is used:

- to describe what things were like and how people felt in the past

Hacía calor.

It was hot.

No **teníamos** mucho dinero.

We didn't have much money.

Tenía hambre.

I was hungry.

- to say what used to happen or what you used to do regularly in the past

Cada día llamaba a su madre.

He used to ring his mother every day.

- to describe what was happening or what the situation was when something else took place

Tomábamos café.

We were having coffee.

Me caí cuando cruzaba la carretera.

I fell over when I was crossing the road.

Grammar Extra!

Sometimes, instead of the ordinary imperfect tense being used to describe what was happening at a given moment in the past when something else occurred interrupting it, the continuous form is used. This is made up of the imperfect tense of **estar** (**estaba**, **estabas** and so on), followed by the **-ando/-iendo** form of the main verb. The other verb – the one that relates the event that occurred – is in the preterite.

Montse miraba la televisión or

Montse was watching television when the telephone rang.

Montse estaba mirando la televisión cuando sonó el teléfono.

⇒ For further information on the **Preterite**, see page 104.

2 Forming the imperfect tense

► To form the imperfect of any regular **-ar** verb, you take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive to form the stem and add the endings: **-aba**, **-abas**, **-aba**, **-ábamos**, **-abais**, **-aban**.

► The following table shows the imperfect tense of one regular **-ar** verb: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*).

(yo)	<u>hablaba</u>	I spoke I was speaking I used to speak
(tú)	<u>hablabas</u>	you spoke you were speaking you used to speak
(él/ella/usted)	<u>hablaba</u>	he/she/it/you spoke he/she/it was speaking, you were speaking he/she/it/you used to speak
(nosotros/nosotras)	<u>hablábamos</u>	we spoke we were speaking we used to speak
(vosotros/vosotras)	<u>hablabais</u>	you spoke you were speaking you used to speak

(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<u>hablaban</u>	they/you spoke they/you were speaking they/you used to speak
-----------------------	-----------------	--

☑ Note that in the imperfect tense of **-ar** verbs, the only accent is on the **nosotros/nosotras** form

Hablaba francés e italiano.

He spoke French and Italian.

Cuando era joven, mi tío trabajaba mucho.

My uncle worked hard when he was young.

Estudiábamos matemáticas e inglés.

We were studying maths and English.

► To form the imperfect of any regular **-er** or **-ir** verb, you take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending of the infinitive to form the stem and add the endings: **-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían.**

► The following table shows the imperfect of two regular verbs: **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	<u>comía</u>	<u>vivía</u>	I ate/lived I was eating/living I used to eat/live
(tú)	<u>comías</u>	<u>vivías</u>	you ate/lived you were eating/living you used to eat/live
(él/ella/usted)	<u>comía</u>	<u>vivía</u>	he/she/it/you ate/lived he/she/it was eating/living, you were eating/living he/she/it was eating/living, you were eating/living
(nosotros/nosotras)	<u>comíamos</u>	<u>vivíamos</u>	we ate/lived we were eating/living we used to eat/live
(vosotros/vosotras)	<u>comíais</u>	<u>vivíais</u>	you ate/lived you were eating/living you used to eat/live
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<u>comían</u>	<u>vivían</u>	they/you ate/lived they/you were eating/living they/you used to eat/live

☑ Note that in the imperfect tense of **-er** and **-ir** verbs, there's an accent on all the endings.

A veces, comíamos en casa de Pepe.

We sometimes used to eat at Pepe's.

Vivía en un piso en la Avenida de

She lived in a flat in Avenida de Barcelona.

Barcelona.

Cuando llegó el médico, ya se sentían mejor. They were already feeling better when the doctor arrived.

Tip

The imperfect endings for **-er** and **-ir** verbs are the same as the endings used to form the conditional for all verbs. The only difference is that, in the conditional, the endings are added to the future stem.

↔ For more information on the **Conditional**, see page [100](#).

3 Irregular verbs in the imperfect tense

> **ser**, **ir** and **ver** are irregular in the imperfect tense.

	ser	Meaning: to be
(yo)	era	I was
(tú)	eras	you were
(él/ella/usted)	era	he/she/it was, you were
(nosotros/nosotras)	éramos	we were
(vosotros/vosotras)	erais	you were
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	eran	they were/you were

Era un chico muy simpático.

He was a very nice boy.

Mi madre era profesora.

My mother was a teacher.

	ir	Meaning: to go
(yo)	iba	I went/used to go/was going
(tú)	ibas	you went/used to go/were going
(él/ella/usted)	iba	he/she/it went/used to go/was going, you went/used to go/were going
(nosotros/nosotras)	íbamos	we went/used to go/were going
(vosotros/vosotras)	ibais	you went/used to go/were going
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	iban	they/you went/used to go/were going

Iba a la oficina cada día.

Every day he would go to the office.

¿Adónde iban?

Where were they going?

	ver	Meaning: to see/to watch
(yo)	veía	I saw/used to see I watched/used to watch/was watching
(tú)	veías	you saw/used to see you watched/used to watch/were watching
(él/ella/usted)	veía	he/she/it saw/used to see he/she/it watched/used to watch/was watching you saw/used to see you watched/used to watch/were watching
(nosotros/nosotras)	veíamos	we saw/used to see

		we watched/used to watch/were watching
(vosotros/vosotras)	veíais	you saw/used to see you watched/used to watch/were watching
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	veían	they/you saw/used to see they/you watched/used to watch/were watching

Los sábados, siempre **lo veíamos**.

We always used to see him on Saturdays.

Veía la televisión cuando llegó mi tío.

I was watching television when my uncle arrived.

4 Reflexive verbs in the imperfect tense

► The imperfect of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**).

Antes **se levantaba** temprano.

He used to get up early.

Grammar Extra!

In Spanish, you also use the imperfect tense with certain time expressions, in particular with **desde** (meaning *since*), **desde hacía** (meaning *for*) and **hacía ... que** (meaning *for*) to talk about activities and states that had started previously and were still going on at a particular point in the past:

Estaba enfermo desde 2000.

He had been ill since 2000.

Conducía ese coche desde hacía tres meses.

He had been driving that car for three months.

Hacía mucho tiempo que **salían** juntos.

They had been going out together for a long time.

Hacía dos años que **vivíamos** en Madrid.

We had been living in Madrid for two years.

Compare the use of **desde, desde hacía** and **hacía ... que** with the imperfect with that of **desde, desde hace**, and **hace ... que** with the present.

⇨ For more information on the use of tenses with **desde**, see page 189.

Key points

- ✓ To form the imperfect tense of **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending and add the endings: **-aba, -abas, -aba, -ábamos, -abais, -aban**.
- ✓ To form the imperfect tense of **-er** and **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** and **-ir** endings and add the endings: **-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían**.
- ✓ **ser, ir** and **ver** are irregular in the imperfect.

The perfect tense

What is the perfect tense?

The **perfect** tense is a verb form used to talk about what has or hasn't happened; for example, *I've broken my glasses; We haven't spoken about it.*

1 Using the perfect tense

- ▶ In English, we use the perfect tense (*have, has* or their shortened forms *'ve* and *'s* followed by a past participle such as *spoken, eaten, lived, been*) to talk about what has or hasn't happened today, this week, this year or in our lives up to now.
- ▶ The Spanish perfect tense is used in a similar way.

He terminado el libro.

I've finished the book.

¿**Has fregado** el suelo?

Have you washed the floor?

Nunca ha estado en Bolivia.

He's never been to Bolivia.

Ha vendido su caballo.

She has sold her horse.

Todavía no hemos comprado un ordenador.

We still haven't bought a computer.

Ya se han ido.

They've already left.

Grammar Extra!

You may also come across uses of the perfect tense in Spanish to talk about actions completed in the very recent past. In English, we'd use the past simple tense in such cases.

¿**Lo has visto**?

Did you see that?

2 Forming the perfect tense

- ▶ As in English, the perfect tense in Spanish has two parts to it. These are:
 - the present tense of the verb **haber** (meaning *to have*)
 - a part of the main verb called the past participle.

3 Forming the past participle

- ▶ To form the past participle of regular **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive and add **-ado**.

hablar (*to speak*)

→ **hablado** (*spoken*)

- ▶ To form the past participle of regular **-er** or **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending of the infinitive and add **-ido**.

comer (*to eat*)

→ **comido** (*eaten*)

vivir (to live) → **vivido** (lived)

4 The perfect tense of some regular verbs

► The following table shows how you can combine the present tense of **haber** with the past participle of any verb to form the perfect tense.

In this case, the past participles are taken from the following regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*); **trabajar** (meaning *to work*); **comer** (meaning *to eat*); **vender** (meaning *to sell*); **vivir** (meaning *to live*); **decidir** (meaning *to decide*).

	Present of haber	Past participle	Meaning
(yo)	he	hablado	I have spoken
(tú)	has	trabajado	you have worked
(él/ella/usted)	ha	comido	he/she/it has eaten, you have eaten
(nosotros/nosotras)	hemos	vendido	we have sold
(vosotros/vosotras)	habéis	vivido	you have lived
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	han	decidido	they/you have decided

Has trabajado mucho.

You've worked hard.

No he comido nada.

I haven't eaten anything.

☐ Note that you should not confuse **haber** with **tener**. Even though they both mean *to have*, **haber** is only used for forming tenses and in certain impersonal expressions such as **hay** and **había** meaning *there is, there are, there was, there were*, and so on.

⇒ For further information on **Impersonal verbs**, see page 129.

5 Verbs with irregular past participles

► Some past participles are irregular. There aren't too many, so try to learn them.

abrir (to open)

→ **abierto** (opened)

cubrir (to cover)

→ **cubierto** (covered)

decir (to say)

→ **dicho** (said)

escribir (to write)

→ **escrito** (written)

freír (to fry)

→ **frito** (fried)

hacer (to do, to make)

→ **hecho** (done, made)

morir (to die)

→ **muerto** (died)

oír (to hear)

→ **oído** (heard)

poner (to put)

→ **puesto** (put)

romper (to break)

→ **roto** (broken)

ver (to see)

→ **visto** (seen)

volver (to return)

→ **vuelto** (returned)

He abierto una cuenta en el banco.

I've opened a bank account.

No **ha dicho** nada.

He hasn't said anything.

Hoy **he hecho** muchas cosas.

I've done a lot today.

Todavía no **he hecho** los deberes.

I haven't done my homework yet.

Han muerto tres personas.

Three people have died.

¿Dónde **has puesto** mis zapatos?

Where have you put my shoes?

Carlos **ha roto** el espejo.

Carlos has broken the mirror.

Jamás **he visto** una cosa parecida.

I've never seen anything like it.

¿**Ha vuelto** Ana?

Has Ana come back?

Tip

he/has/ha and so on must **NEVER** be separated from the past participle. Any object pronouns go before the form of **haber** being used, and **not** between the form of **haber** and the past participle.

No **lo** he visto.

I haven't seen it.

¿**Lo** has hecho ya?

Have you done it yet?

6 Reflexive verbs in the perfect tense

- The perfect tense of reflexive verbs is formed in the same way as for ordinary verbs. The reflexive pronouns (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**) come before **he, has, ha**, and so on. The table on the next page shows the perfect tense of **lavarse** in full.

(Subject pronoun)	Reflexive pronoun	Present tense of haber	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	me	he	lavado	I have washed
(tú)	te	has	lavado	you have washed
(él) (ella) (uno)	se	ha	lavado	he has washed she has

(usted)				washed one has washed it has washed you have washed
(nosotros) (nosotras)	nos	hemos	lavado	we have washed we have washed
(vosotros) (vosotras)	os	habéis	lavado	you have washed you have washed
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	se	han	lavado	they have washed they have washed you have washed

Grammar Extra!

Don't use the perfect tense with **desde, desde hace** and **hace ... que** when talking about how long something has been going on for. Use the present tense instead.

Está enfermo desde julio.

He has been ill since July.

Conduce ese coche desde hace tres meses.

He has been driving that car for three months.

Hace mucho tiempo que salen juntos.

They have been going out together for a long time.

⇨ For more information on the **Present tense**, see page 72.

- In European Spanish you CAN use the perfect tense in the negative with **desde** and **desde hace**.

No lo he visto desde hace mucho tiempo.

I haven't seen him for a long time.

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish perfect tense is formed using the present tense of **haber** and a past participle.
- ✓ In Spanish, the perfect tense is used very much as it is in English.
- ✓ The past participle of regular **-ar** verbs ends in **-ado**, and the past participle of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs ends in **-ido**.
- ✓ Make sure you know the following irregular past participle forms: **abierto**, **cubierto**, **dicho**, **escrito**, **frito**, **hecho**, **muerto**, **oído**, **puesto**, **roto**, **visto**, **vuelto**.

The pluperfect or past perfect tense

What is the pluperfect tense?

The **pluperfect** is a verb tense that is used to talk about what had happened or had been true at a point in the past, for example, *I'd forgotten to finish my homework*.

1 Using the pluperfect tense

- When talking about the past, we sometimes refer to things that had happened previously. In English, we often use *had* followed by a past participle such as *spoken*, *eaten*, *lived* or *been* to do this. This tense is known as the pluperfect or past perfect tense.
- The Spanish pluperfect tense is used and formed in a similar way.

Ya habíamos comido cuando llegó.

We'd already eaten when he arrived.

Nunca lo había visto antes de aquella noche.

I'd never seen it before that night.

2 Forming the pluperfect tense

- Like the perfect tense, the pluperfect tense in Spanish has two parts to it:

- the imperfect tense of the verb **haber** (meaning *to have*)
- the past participle.

⇒ For more information on the **Imperfect tense** and **Past participles**, see pages **110** and **115**.

- The table below shows how you can combine the imperfect tense of **haber** with the past participle of any verb to form the pluperfect tense. Here, the past participles are taken from the following regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*); **trabajar** (meaning *to work*); **comer** (meaning *to eat*); **vender** (meaning *to sell*); **vivir** (meaning *to live*); **decidir** (meaning *to decide*).

--	--	--	--

(Subject pronoun)	Imperfect of haber	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	había	hablado	I had spoken
(tú)	habías	trabajado	you had worked
(él/ella/usted)	había	comido	he/she/it/you had eaten
(nosotros/nosotras)	habíamos	vendido	we had sold
(vosotros/vosotras)	habíais	vivido	you had lived
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	habían	decidido	they/you had decided

No **había trabajado** antes.

He hadn't worked before.

Había vendido su caballo.

She had sold her horse.

► Remember that some very common verbs have irregular past participles.

abrir (to open)

→ **abierto** (opened)

cubrir (to cover)

→ **cubierto** (covered)

decir (to say)

→ **dicho** (said)

escribir (to write)

→ **escrito** (written)

freír (to fry)

→ **frito** (fried)

hacer (to do, to make)

→ **hecho** (done, made)

morir (to die)

→ **muerto** (died)

oír (to hear)

→ **oído** (heard)

poner (to put)

→ **puesto** (put)

romper (to break)

→ **roto** (broken)

ver (to see)

→ **visto** (seen)

volver (to return)

→ **vuelto** (returned)

No **había dicho** nada.

He hadn't said anything.

Tres personas **habían muerto**.

Three people had died.

Tip

había/habías/habían and so on must **NEVER** be separated from the past participle. Any object pronouns go before the form of **haber** being used, and **not** between the form of **haber** and the past participle.

No lo había visto.

I hadn't seen it.

3 **Reflexive verbs in the pluperfect tense**

- The pluperfect tense of reflexive verbs is formed in the same way as for ordinary verbs. The reflexive pronouns (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**) come before **había, habías, había,** and so on. The table on the next page shows the pluperfect tense of **lavarse** in full.

(Subject pronoun)	Reflexive pronoun	Imperfect tense of haber	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	me	había	lavado	I had washed
(tú)	te	habías	lavado	you had washed
(él) (ella) (uno) (usted)	se	había	lavado	he had washed she had washed one had washed it had washed you had washed
(nosotros) (nosotras)	nos	habíamos	lavado	we had washed we had washed

(vosotros)	os	habíais	lavado	you had washed you had washed
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	se	habían	lavado	they had washed they had washed you had washed

Grammar Extra!

Don't use the pluperfect with **desde**, **desde hacía** and **hacía ... que** when talking about how long something had been going on for. Use the imperfect instead.

Estaba enfermo desde 2000.

He had been ill since 2000.

Conducía ese coche desde hacía tres meses.

He had been driving that car for three months.

Hacía mucho tiempo que salían juntos.

They had been going out together for a long time.

⇒ For more information on the *Imperfect tense*, see page 110.

In European Spanish you can use the pluperfect tense in the negative with **desde** and **desde hacía**.

No lo había visto desde hacía mucho tiempo.

I hadn't seen him for a long time.

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish pluperfect tense is formed using the imperfect tense of **haber** and a past participle.
- ✓ In Spanish, the pluperfect tense is used very much as it is in English.
- ✓ The past participle of regular **-ar** verbs ends in **-ado**, while that of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs ends in **-ido**.
- ✓ Make sure you know the irregular forms: **abierto**, **cubierto**, **dicho**, **escrito**, **frito**, **hecho**, **muerto**, **oído**, **puesto**, **roto**, **visto**, **vuelto**.

The passive

What is the passive?

The **passive** is a verb form that is used when the subject of the verb is the person or thing that is affected by the action, for example, *Mary is liked by everyone; Two children were hurt in an accident; The house was sold.*

1 Using the passive

- ▶ Verbs can be either active or passive.
- ▶ In a normal or active sentence, the subject of the verb is the person or thing doing the action described by the verb. The object of the verb is the person or thing that the verb most directly affects.

Peter (*subject*) wrote (*active verb*) a letter (*object*).
Ryan (*subject*) hit (*active verb*) me (*object*).

- ▶ Provided the verb has an object, in English, as in Spanish, you can turn an active sentence round to make it a passive sentence by using *to be* followed by a past participle. In this case the person or thing directly affected by the action becomes the subject of the verb.

A letter (*subject*) was written (*passive verb*).
I (*subject*) was hit (*passive verb*).

- ▶ To show who or what is responsible for the action in a passive construction, in English you use *by*.

I (*subject*) was hit (*passive verb*) by Ryan.

- ▶ You use the passive rather than the active when you want to focus attention on the person or thing affected by the action rather than the person or thing that carries it out.

John was injured in an accident.

- ▶ You can also use the passive when you don't know who is responsible for the action.

Several buses were vandalized.

2 Forming the passive

- ▶ In English we use the verb *to be* with a past participle (*was painted, were seen, are made*) to form the passive. In Spanish, the passive is formed in exactly the same way, using the verb **ser** (meaning *to be*) and a past participle. When you say who the action is or was done by, you use the preposition **por** (meaning *by*).

⇨ For more information on the **Past participle**, see page 115.

Son fabricados en España.

They're made in Spain.

Es hecho a mano.

It's made by hand *or* It's handmade.

Fue escrito por JK Rowling.

It was written by JK Rowling.

La casa fue construida en 1956.

The house was built in 1956.

El cuadro **fue pintado** por mi padre.

The picture was painted by my father.

El colegio va a **ser modernizado**.

The school is going to be modernized.

☑ Note that the ending of the past participle agrees with the subject of the verb **ser** in exactly the same way as an adjective would.

⇨ For more information on **Adjectives**, see page 19.

► Here is the preterite of the **-ar** verb **enviar** (meaning *to send*) in its passive form.

(Subject pronoun)	Preterite of ser	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	fui	enviado (masculine) enviada (feminine)	I was sent
(tú)	fuiste	enviado (masculine) enviada (feminine)	you were sent
(él) (ella) (usted)	fue	enviado enviada enviado (masculine) enviada (feminine)	he was sent she was sent you were sent
(nosotros) (nosotras)	fuimos fuimos	enviados enviadas	we were sent we were sent
(vosotros) (vosotras)	fuisteis	enviados enviadas	you were sent you were sent
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	fueron	enviados enviadas enviados (masculine) enviadas (feminine)	they were sent they were sent you were sent you were sent

► You can form other tenses in the passive by changing the tense of the verb **ser**.

Future: **Serán enviados.** They will be sent.

Perfect: **Han sido enviados.** They have been sent.

► Irregular past participles are the same as they are in the perfect tense.

⇨ For more information on **Irregular past participles**, see page 116.

3 Avoiding the passive

► Passives are not as common in Spanish as they are in English. Spanish native speakers usually prefer to avoid using the passive by:

- using the active construction instead of the passive

La policía **interrogó** al sospechoso.

The suspect was interrogated by the police.

Su madre le **regaló** un libro.

He was given a book by his mother.

- using an active verb in the third person plural

Ponen demasiados anuncios en la televisión.

Too many adverts are shown on television.

- using a reflexive construction (as long as you don't need to say who the action is done by)

Se fabrican en España.

They're made in Spain.

Se hace a mano.

It's made by hand.

La casa **se construyó** en 1956.

The house was built in 1956.

Todos los libros **se han vendido**.

All the books have been sold.

⇒ For more information on **Reflexive verbs**, see page 91.

- using an impersonal **se** construction

Se cree que va a morir.

It is thought he will die.

⇒ For more information on the impersonal **se** construction, see page 133.

Tip

Active verbs often have both a direct object and an indirect object. He gave me (*indirect object*) a book (*direct object*).

In English, both of these objects can be made the subject of a passive verb; *I was given a book.* or *A book was given to me.*

In Spanish, an indirect object can never become the subject of a passive verb.

Key points

- ✓ The passive is formed using **ser** + past participle, sometimes followed by **por** (meaning *by*).
- ✓ The past participle must agree with the subject of **ser**.
- ✓ Passive constructions are not as common as they are in English. You can often avoid the passive by using the third person plural of the active verb or by using a reflexive construction.

The gerund

What is a gerund?

The **gerund** is a verb form ending in *-ing* which is used to form verb tenses, and which in English may also be used as an adjective and a noun, for example, *What are you doing?*; *the setting sun*; *Swimming is easy!*

1 **Using the gerund**

► In Spanish, the gerund is a form of the verb that usually ends in **-ando** or **-iendo** and is used to form continuous tenses.

Estoy trabajando.

I'm working.

Estamos comiendo.

We are eating.

► It is used with **estar** to form continuous tenses such as:

- the present continuous

Está fregando los platos.

He's washing the dishes.

Estoy escribiendo una carta.

I'm writing a letter.

⇒ For more information on the **Present continuous**, see page 84.

- the imperfect continuous

Estaba reparando el coche.

She was fixing the car.

Estaban esperándonos.

They were waiting for us.

☑ Note that continuous tenses should only be used in Spanish to describe action that is or was happening at the precise moment you are talking about.

Grammar Extra!

Sometimes another verb, such as **ir** or **venir** is used instead of **estar** with a gerund in continuous tenses. These verbs emphasize the gradualness or the slowness of the process.

Iba anocheciendo.

It was getting dark.

Eso lo vengo diciendo desde hace tiempo.

That's what I've been saying all along.

► The gerund is also used after certain other verbs:

- **seguir haciendo algo** and **continuar haciendo algo** are both used with the meaning of *to go on doing something* or *to continue doing something*.

Siguió cantando or Continuó cantando. He went on singing or He continued singing.

Siguieron leyendo or They went on reading or They continued reading.

Continuaron leyendo.

- **llevar** with a time expression followed by the gerund is used to talk about how long someone has been doing something:

Lleva dos años estudiando inglés. He's been studying English for two years.

Llevo una hora esperando aquí. I've been waiting here for an hour.

☑ Note that the present tense of **llevar** followed by a gerund means the same as the English *have/has been + -ing*.

- **pasar(se)** with a time expression followed by the gerund is used to talk about how long you've spent doing something.

Pasé or Me pasé el fin de semana estudiando. I spent the weekend studying.

Pasamos or Nos pasamos el día leyendo. We spent the day reading.

- Verbs of movement, such as **salir** (meaning *to come out* or *to go out*), **entrar** (meaning *to come in* or *to go in*), and **irse** (meaning *to leave*) are sometimes followed by a gerund such as **corriendo** (meaning *running*) or **cojeando** (meaning *limping*). The English equivalent of **salir corriendo**, **entrar corriendo** or **irse cojeando**, would be *to run out*, *to run in* or *to limp off* in such cases.

Salió corriendo. He ran out.

Se fue cojeando. He limped off.

Tip

Use a past participle not a gerund to talk about physical position.

Estaba tumbado en el sofá. He was lying on the sofa.

Estaba sentada. She was sitting down.

Lo encontré tendido en el suelo. I found him lying on the floor.

La escalera estaba apoyada contra la pared. The ladder was leaning against the wall.

⇨ For more information on the **Past participles**, see page 115.

- You will also come across the gerund used in other ways. For example:

Los vimos jugando al fútbol. We saw them playing football.

Estudiando, aprobarás. By studying, or If you study, you'll pass.

2 Forming the gerund of regular verbs

- To form the gerund of regular **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive to form the stem, and add **-ando**.

Infinitive	Stem	Gerund
------------	------	--------

hablar	habl-	hablando
trabajar	trabaj-	trabajando

- To form the gerund of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** and **-ir** ending of the infinitive to form the stem, and add **-iendo**.

Infinitive	Stem	Gerund
comer	com-	comiendo
vivir	viv-	viviendo

3 The gerund of irregular verbs

- Some verbs have an irregular gerund form. You have to learn these.

Infinitives	Meaning	Gerund	Meaning
decir	to say	diciendo	saying
dormir	to sleep	durmiendo	sleeping
freír	to fry	friendo	frying
morir	to die	muriendo	dying
pedir	to ask for	pidiendo	asking for
poder	to be able to	pudiendo	being able to
reír	to laugh	riendo	laughing
seguir	to follow	siguiendo	following
sentir	to feel	sintiendo	feeling
venir	to come	viniendo	coming
vestir	to dress	vistiendo	dressing

- In the next group of verbs there is a **y** rather than the normal **i**.

Infinitives	Meaning	Gerund	Meaning
caer	to fall	cayendo	falling
creer	to believe	creyendo	believing
leer	to read	leyendo	reading
oír	to hear	oyendo	hearing
traer	to bring	trayendo	bringing
ir	to go	yendo	going

Tip

In English, we often use *-ing* forms as adjectives, for example, *running water*, *shining eyes*, *the following day*. In Spanish, you cannot use the **-ando** and **-iendo** forms like this.

Instead, there are sometimes corresponding forms ending in **-ante** and **-iente** that can be used as adjectives.

agua corriente	running water
ojos brillantes	shining eyes
Al día siguiente, visitamos Toledo.	The following day we visited Toledo.

Similarly, in English, we often use the *-ing* forms as nouns. In Spanish you have to use the infinitive instead.

Fumar es malo para la salud.	<u>Smoking</u> is bad for you.
-------------------------------------	--------------------------------

4 **Position of pronouns with the gerund**

► Object pronouns and reflexive pronouns are usually attached to the end of the gerund, although you can also often put them before **estar** in continuous tenses.

Estoy hablándote or Te estoy hablando.	I'm talking to you.
Está vistiéndose or Se está vistiendo.	He's getting dressed.
Estaban mostrándose or Se lo estaban mostrando.	They were showing it to him/her/them/you.

☑ Note that you will always have to add an accent to keep the stress in the same place when adding pronouns to the end of a gerund.

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

Key points

- ✓ Use the gerund in continuous tenses with **estar** as well as after **seguir** and **continuar**.
- ✓ Gerunds for **-ar** verbs add **-ando** to the stem of the verb.
- ✓ Gerunds for **-er** and **-ir** verbs usually add **-iendo** to the stem of the verb.
- ✓ **-ando** and **-iendo** gerunds cannot be used as adjectives or nouns.
- ✓ You can attach pronouns to the end of the gerund, or sometimes put them before the previous verb.

Impersonal verbs

What is an impersonal verb?

An **impersonal verb** is a verb whose subject is *it*, but this '*it*' does not refer to any specific thing; for example, *It's going to rain*; *It's nine o'clock*.

1 Verbs that are always used impersonally.

- There are some verbs such as **llover** (meaning *to rain*) and **nevar** (meaning *to snow*), that are only used in the '*it*' form, the infinitive, and as a gerund (the *-ing* form of the verb). These are called **impersonal verbs** because there is no person, animal or thing performing the action.

Llueve.	It's raining.
Está lloviendo.	It's raining.
Va a llover.	It's going to rain.
Nieva.	It's snowing.
Está nevando.	It's snowing.
Nevaba.	It was snowing.
Estaba nevando.	It was snowing.
Mañana nevará.	It will snow tomorrow.

2 Verbs that are sometimes used impersonally.

- There are also some other very common verbs that are sometimes used as impersonal verbs, for example **hacer**, **haber** and **ser**.
- **hacer** is used in a number of impersonal expressions relating to the weather:

Hace frío/calor.	It's cold/hot.
Ayer <u>hacía</u> mucho frío/calor.	It was very cold/hot yesterday.
Hace sol/viento.	It's sunny/windy.
Va a <u>hacer</u> sol/viento.	It's going to be sunny/windy.
Hace un tiempo estupendo/horrible.	It's a lovely/horrible day.

- **hacer** is also used in combination with **que** and **desde** in impersonal time expressions, to talk about how long something has been going on for or how long it is since something happened.

<u>Hace seis meses que vivo aquí.</u> or Vivo aquí desde hace seis meses.	I've been living here for six months.
<u>Hace tres años que estudio español</u> or Estudio español desde hace tres años.	I've been studying Spanish for three years.
<u>Hace mucho tiempo que no la veo</u> or No la veo desde hace mucho tiempo.	I haven't seen her for ages or It is ages since I saw her.
<u>Hace varias semanas que no voy por allí</u> or No	I haven't been there for several weeks or It

voy por allí desde hace varias semanas.

is several weeks since I went there.

☑ Note the use of the present simple in Spanish in the above examples where in English we'd use the perfect tense or the past tense.

► **hacer** is also used impersonally in the expression (**me/te/le**) **hace falta**, which means *it is necessary* (for me/you/him).

Si **hace falta**, voy.

I'll go if necessary.

No **hace falta** llamar.

We/You/I needn't call.

Me **hace falta** otro vaso más.

I need another glass.

No **hace falta** ser un experto.

You don't need to be an expert.

No **hacía falta**.

It wasn't necessary.

☑ Note that not all impersonal expressions in Spanish are translated into English using impersonal expressions.

► **haber** too can be used impersonally with the meaning *there is/there are, there was/there were, there will be*, and so on. It has the special form **hay** in the present. For the other tenses, you take the third person singular (the 'it' form) of **haber** in the appropriate tense.

Hay un cine cerca de aquí.

There's a cinema near here.

Hay dos supermercados.

There are two supermarkets.

No **hay** bares.

There are no bars.

Había mucho ruido.

There was a lot of noise.

Había muchos coches.

There were a lot of cars

Hubo un accidente.

There was an accident.

Hubo varios problemas.

There were several problems.

¿**Habr**á tiempo?

Will there be time?

¿**Habr**á suficientes sillas?

Will there be enough chairs?

☑ Note that you should always use the singular form (never the plural), no matter how many things there are.

► **haber** is used in the construction **hay que** with an infinitive to talk about actions that need to be taken.

Hay que trabajar más.

We/You need to work harder.

Hay que ser respetuoso.

You/We/One must be respectful.

Habrá que decírselo.

We'll/You'll have to tell him.

► **ser** can be used in certain impersonal constructions with adjectives, for example:

- **es/era/fue** + adjective + infinitive

Es importante ahorrar dinero.

It's important to save money.

Fue torpe hacer eso.

It was silly to do that.

Sería mejor esperar.

It would be better to wait.

- **es/era/fue** + adjective + **que** + verb

Es cierto que tengo problemas.

It's true that I've got problems.

Es verdad que trabaja mucho.

It's true that he works hard.

☐ Note that when they are used in the negative (**no es cierto que...**; **no es verdad que...**), these expressions have to be followed by the subjunctive.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page 134.

Grammar Extra!

When impersonal expressions that don't state facts are followed by **que** (meaning *that*) and a verb, this verb must be in the subjunctive.

For this reason, the following non-factual impersonal expressions are all followed by the subjunctive:

- **Es posible que...** It's possible that... / ...might...
 - Es posible que ganen.** They might win.
- **Es imposible que...** It's impossible that... / ...can't possibly...
 - Es imposible que lo sepan.** They can't possibly know.
- **Es necesario que...** It's necessary that.../ ...need to...
 - No es necesario que vengas.** You don't need to come.
- **Es mejor que...** ...be better to...
 - Es mejor que lo pongas aquí.** You'd better put it here.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page 134.

► **ser** is also used impersonally with **de día** and **de noche** to say whether it's day or night.

Era de noche cuando llegamos.

It was night when we arrived.

Todavía es de día allí.

It's still day there.

⇒ For other time expressions with **ser**, see page 80.

► **basta con** is used impersonally:

- with a following infinitive to mean *it's enough to/all you need do is*

Basta con telefonar para reservar un

All you need do is to phone to reserve a seat.

asiento.

Basta con dar una vuelta por la ciudad para... You only need to take a walk round the city to ...

- with a noun or pronoun to mean *all you need is* or *all it takes is*

Basta con un error para que todo se estropee. All it takes is one mistake to ruin everything.

► **(me) parece que** is used to give opinions.

Parece que va a llover. It looks as if it's going to rain.

Me parece que estás equivocado. I think that you are wrong.

☑ Note that when **(me) parece que** is used in the negative, the following verb has to be in the subjunctive.

⇨ For more information on the *Subjunctive*, see page 134.

► **vale la pena** is used to talk about what's worth doing.

Vale la pena. It's worth it.

No vale la pena. It's not worth it.

Vale la pena hacer el esfuerzo. It's worth making the effort.

No vale la pena gastar tanto dinero. It's not worth spending so much money.

Grammar Extra!

se is often used in impersonal expressions, especially with the verbs **creer**, **decir**, **poder**, and **tratar**. In such cases it often corresponds to *it*, *one* or *you* in English.

- **Se cree que...** It is thought *or* People think that...
- **Se cree que es un mito.** It is thought to be a myth.
- **Se dice que...** It is said *or* People say that...
- **Se dice que es rico.** He is said to be rich.
- **Se puede...** One can.../People can.../You can...
- **Aquí se puede aparcar.** One can park here.
- **Se trata de...** It's a question of.../It's about...
- **No se trata de dinero.** It isn't a question of money.
- **Se trata de resolverlo.** We must solve it.

⇨ For more information on *Reflexive verbs*, see page 91.

Key points

- ✓ Impersonal verbs and expressions can only be used in the 'it' form, the infinitive and the gerund.
- ✓ Impersonal expressions relating to the weather are very common.
- ✓ Although in English we use *there is* or *there are* depending on the number of people or things that there are, in Spanish **hay**, **había**, **hubo** and so on are used in the singular form only.
- ✓ Some very common ordinary verbs are also used as impersonal verbs.

The subjunctive

What is the subjunctive?

The **subjunctive** is a verb form that is used in certain circumstances especially when expressing some sort of feeling or when there is doubt about whether something will happen or whether something is true. It is only used occasionally in modern English, for example, *If I were you, ...; So be it; I wish you were here.*

1 Using the subjunctive

- Although you may not know it, you will already be familiar with many of the forms of the present subjunctive, as it is used when giving orders and instructions not to do something as well as in the **usted**, **ustedes** and **nosotros** forms of instructions to do something. For example, if you phone someone in Spain, they will probably answer with **¡diga!** or **¡dígame!**, an imperative form taken from the present subjunctive of **decir**.

⇨ For more information on **Imperatives**, see page 85.

- In Spanish, the subjunctive is used after certain verbs and conjunctions when two parts of a sentence have different subjects.

Tengo miedo de que le ocurra algo. I'm afraid something may (*subjunctive*) happen to him.

(The subject of the first part of the sentence is *I*; the subject of the second part of the sentence is *something*.)

- In English, in a sentence like *We want him/José to be happy*, we use an infinitive (*to be*) for the second verb even though *want* and *be happy* have different subjects (*we* and *him/José*).
- In Spanish you cannot do this. You have to use the subjunctive for the second verb.

Queremos que él sea feliz.

We want him to be happy.

Queremos que José sea feliz.

We want José to be happy.

- You can use an infinitive for the second verb in Spanish when the subject of both verbs is the same.

Queremos ser felices.

We want to be happy.

2 Coming across the subjunctive

► The subjunctive has several tenses, the main ones being the present subjunctive and the imperfect subjunctive. The tense used for the subjunctive verb depends on the tense of the previous verb.

⇨ For more information on *Tenses with the subjunctive*, see page 139.

► In sentences containing two verbs with different subjects, you will find that the second verb is in the subjunctive when the first verb:

- expresses a wish

Quiero que vengan.

I want them to come.

Quiero que se vaya.

I want him/her to leave.

Deseamos que tengan éxito.

We want them to be successful.

- expresses an emotion

Siento mucho que no puedas venir.

I'm very sorry that you can't come.

Espero que venga.

I hope he comes.

Me sorprende que no esté aquí.

I'm surprised that he isn't here.

Me alegro de que te gusten.

I'm pleased that you like them.

► If the subject of both verbs is the same, an infinitive is used as the second verb instead of a subjunctive.

► Compare the following examples. In the examples on the left, both the verb expressing the wish or emotion and the second verb have the same subject, so the second verb is an infinitive. In the examples on the right, each verb has a different subject, so the second verb is in the subjunctive.

Infinitive construction	Subjunctive construction
Quiero <u>estudiar</u> . I want to study.	Quiero que José <u>estudie</u> . I want José to study.
Maite quiere <u>irse</u> . Maite wants to leave.	Maite quiere que me <u>vaya</u> . Maite wants me to leave.
Siento no <u>poder</u> venir. I'm sorry I can't come.	Siento que no <u>puedas</u> venir. I'm sorry that you can't come.
Me alegro de <u>poder</u> ayudar. I'm pleased to be able to help.	Me alegro de que <u>puedas</u> ayudar. I'm pleased you can help.

► You will also come across the verb + **que** + subjunctive construction (often with a personal object such as **me**, **te** and so on) when the first verb is one you use to ask or advise somebody to do something.

Sólo te pido que tengas cuidado.

I'm only asking you to be careful.

Te aconsejo que no llegues tarde.

I'd advise you not to be late.

► You will also come across the subjunctive in the following cases:

- after verbs expressing doubt or uncertainty, and verbs saying what you think about something that are used with **no**

Dudo que tenga tiempo. I doubt I'll have time.

No creo que venga. I don't think she'll come.

No pienso que esté bien. I don't think it's right.

- in impersonal constructions that show a need to do something

¿Hace falta que vaya Jaime? Does Jaime need to go?

No es necesario que vengas. You don't need to come.

- in impersonal constructions that do not express facts

Es posible que tengan razón. They may be right.

⇒ For more information on *Impersonal verbs*, see page 129.

Grammar Extra!

Use the indicative (that is, any verb form that isn't subjunctive) after impersonal expressions that state facts provided they are not in the negative.

Es verdad que es interesante. It's true that it's interesting.

Es cierto que me gusta el café. It's true I like coffee.

Parece que se va a ir. It seems that he's going to go.

► The subjunctive is used after **que** to express wishes.

¡Que lo pases bien! Have a good time!

¡Que te diviertas! Have fun!

► The subjunctive is also used after certain conjunctions linking two parts of a sentence which each have different subjects.

- **antes de que** before

¿Quieres decirle algo antes de que se vaya? Do you want to say anything to him before he goes?

- **para que** so that

Es para que te acuerdes de mí. It's so that you'll remember me.

- **sin que** without

Salimos sin que nos vieran. We left without them seeing us.

⇒ For more information on **Conjunctions**, see page 192.

Tip

Use **para**, **sin** and **antes de** with the infinitive when the subject of both verbs is the same.

- Fue en taxi para no llegar tarde.** He went by taxi so that he wouldn't be late.
- Pedro se ha ido sin esperarnos.** Pedro's gone without waiting for us.
- Cenamos antes de ir al teatro.** We had dinner before we went to the theatre.

3 Forming the present subjunctive

- To form the present subjunctive of most verbs, take off the **-o** ending of the **yo** form of the present simple, and add a fixed set of endings.
- For **-ar** verbs, the endings are: **-e, -es, -e, -emos, -éis, -en**.
- For both **-er** and **-ir** verbs, the endings are: **-a, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an**.
- The following table shows the present subjunctive of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
hablar to speak	hable	hables	hable	hablemos	habléis	hablen
comer to eat	coma	comas	coma	comamos	comáis	coman
vivir to live	viva	vivas	viva	vivamos	viváis	vivan

- Quiero que comas algo.** I want you to eat something.
- Me sorprende que no hable inglés.** I'm surprised he doesn't speak English.
- No es verdad que trabajen aquí.** It isn't true that they work here.

- Some verbs have very irregular **yo** forms in the ordinary present tense and these irregular forms are reflected in the stem for the present subjunctive.

--	--	--	--	--	--	--

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
decir to say	<u> diga </u>	<u> digas </u>	<u> diga </u>	<u> digamos </u>	<u> digáis </u>	<u> digan </u>
hacer to do/make	<u> haga </u>	<u> hagas </u>	<u> haga </u>	<u> hagamos </u>	<u> hagáis </u>	<u> hagan </u>
poner to put	<u> ponga </u>	<u> pongas </u>	<u> ponga </u>	<u> pongamos </u>	<u> pongáis </u>	<u> pongan </u>
salir to leave	<u> salga </u>	<u> salgas </u>	<u> salga </u>	<u> salgamos </u>	<u> salgáis </u>	<u> salgan </u>
tener to have	<u> tenga </u>	<u> tengas </u>	<u> tenga </u>	<u> tengamos </u>	<u> tengáis </u>	<u> tengan </u>
venir to come	<u> venga </u>	<u> vengas </u>	<u> venga </u>	<u> vengamos </u>	<u> vengáis </u>	<u> vengan </u>

Voy a limpiar la casa antes de que vengan. I'm going to clean the house before they come.

☑ Note that only the **vosotros** form has an accent.

Tip

The present subjunctive endings are the opposite of what you'd expect, as **-ar** verbs have endings starting with **-e**, and **-er** and **-ir** verbs have endings starting with **-a**.

4 Forming the present subjunctive of irregular verbs

► The following verbs have irregular subjunctive forms:

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)

dar to give	dé	des	dé	demos	deis	den
estar to be	esté	estés	esté	estemos	estéis	estén
haber to have	haya	hayas	haya	hayamos	hayáis	hayan
ir to go	vaya	vayas	vaya	vayamos	vayáis	vayan
saber to know	sepa	sepas	sepa	sepamos	sepáis	sepan
ser to be	sea	seas	sea	seamos	seáis	sean

No quiero que te vayas.

I don't want you to go.

Dudo que esté aquí.

I doubt if it's here.

No piensan que sea él.

They don't think it's him.

Es posible que haya problemas.

There may be problems.

- Verbs that change their stems (radical-changing verbs) in the ordinary present usually change them in the same way in the present subjunctive.

⇒ For more information on **radical-changing verbs**, see page 76.

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
pensar to think	<u>piense</u>	<u>pienses</u>	<u>piense</u>	<u>pensemos</u>	<u>penséis</u>	<u>piens</u>
entender to understand	<u>entienda</u>	<u>entiendas</u>	<u>entienda</u>	<u>entendamos</u>	<u>entendáis</u>	<u>entier</u>
poder to be able	<u>pueda</u>	<u>puedas</u>	<u>pueda</u>	<u>podamos</u>	<u>podáis</u>	<u>pueda</u>
querer to want	<u>quiera</u>	<u>quieras</u>	<u>quiera</u>	<u>queramos</u>	<u>queráis</u>	<u>quier</u>
volver to return	<u>vuelva</u>	<u>vuelvas</u>	<u>vuelva</u>	<u>volvamos</u>	<u>volváis</u>	<u>vuelv</u>

No hace falta que **vuelvas**.

There's no need for you to come back.

Es para que lo **entiendas**.

It's so that you understand.

Me alegro de que **puedas venir**.

I'm pleased you can come.

- Sometimes the stem of the **nosotros** and **vosotros** forms isn't the same as it is in the ordinary present tense.

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
dormir to sleep	duerma	duermas	duerma	durmamos	durmáis	duerman
morir to die	muera	mueras	muera	muramos	muráis	mueran
pedir to ask for	pida	pidas	pida	pidamos	pidáis	pidan
seguir to follow	 siga	 sigas	 siga	 sigamos	 sigáis	 sigan
sentir to feel	sienta	sientas	sienta	sintamos	sintáis	sientan

Queremos hacerlo antes de que nos muramos.

We want to do it before we die.

Vendré a veros cuando os sintáis mejor.

I'll come and see you when you feel better.

5 **Tenses with the subjunctive**

- If the verb in the first part of the sentence is in the **present**, **future** or **imperative**, the second verb will usually be in the **present subjunctive**.

Quiero (*present*) **que lo hagas** (*present subjunctive*).

I want you to do it.

Iremos (*future*) **por aquí para que no nos vean** (*present subjunctive*).

We'll go this way so that they won't see us.

- If the verb in the first part of the sentence is in the **conditional** or a **past tense**, the second verb will usually be in the **imperfect subjunctive**.

Me gustaría (conditional) **que llegaras** (imperfect subjunctive) **temprano**.
I'd like you to arrive early.

Les pedí (preterite) **que me esperaran** (imperfect subjunctive).
I asked them to wait for me.

6 Indicative or subjunctive?

- Many expressions are followed by the indicative (the ordinary form of the verb) when they state facts, and by the subjunctive when they refer to possible or intended future events and outcomes.
- Certain conjunctions relating to time such as **cuando** (meaning *when*), **hasta que** (meaning *until*), **en cuanto** (meaning *as soon as*) and **mientras** (meaning *while*) are used with the indicative when the action has happened or when talking about what happens regularly.

¿Qué dijo cuando te <u>vio</u>?	What did he say when he saw you?
Siempre lo compro cuando <u>voy</u> a España.	I always buy it when I go to Spain.
Me quedé allí hasta que <u>volvió</u> Antonio.	I stayed there until Antonio came back.

- The same conjunctions are followed by the subjunctive when talking about a vague future time.

¿Qué quieres hacer cuando <u>seas</u> mayor?	What do you want to do when you grow up? (<i>but you're not grown up yet</i>)
¿Por qué no te quedas aquí hasta que <u>vuelva</u> Antonio?	Why don't you stay here until Antonio comes back? (<i>but Antonio hasn't come back yet</i>)
Lo haré en cuanto <u>pueda</u> or tan pronto como <u>pueda</u>.	I'll do it as soon as I can. (<i>but I'm not able to yet</i>)

Grammar Extra!

aunque is used with the indicative (the ordinary verb forms) when it means *although* or *even though*. In this case, the second part of the sentence is stating a fact.

Me gusta el francés aunque prefiero el alemán. I like French although I prefer German.
Seguí andando aunque me dolía la pierna. I went on walking even though my leg hurt.

aunque is used with the subjunctive when it means *even if*. Here, the second part of the sentence is not yet a fact.

Te llamaré cuando vuelva aunque sea tarde. I'll ring you when I get back, even if it's late.

7 Forming the imperfect subjunctive

- For all verbs, there are two imperfect subjunctive forms that are exactly the same in meaning.
- The stem for both imperfect subjunctive forms is the same: you take off the **-aron** or **-ieron** ending of the **ellos** form of the preterite and add a fixed set of endings to what is left.

⇒ For more information on the **Preterite**, see page 104.

- For **-ar** verbs, the endings are: **-ara, -aras, -ara, -áramos, -arais, -aran** or **-ase, -ases, -ase, -ásemos, -aseis, -asen**. The first form is more common.
- For **-er** and **-ir** verbs, the endings are: **-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran** or **-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen**. The first form is more common.
- The following table shows the imperfect subjunctive of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
hablar to speak	<u>hablara</u>	<u>hablaras</u>	<u>hablara</u>	<u>habláramos</u>	<u>hablarais</u>	<u>hablaran</u>
	<u>hablase</u>	<u>hablases</u>	<u>hablase</u>	<u>hablásemos</u>	<u>hablaseis</u>	<u>hablasen</u>
comer to eat	<u>comiera</u>	<u>comieras</u>	<u>comiera</u>	<u>comiéramos</u>	<u>comierais</u>	<u>comieran</u>
	<u>comiese</u>	<u>comieses</u>	<u>comiese</u>	<u>comiésemos</u>	<u>comieseis</u>	<u>comiesen</u>
vivir to live	<u>viviera</u>	<u>vivieras</u>	<u>viviera</u>	<u>viviéramos</u>	<u>vivierais</u>	<u>vivieran</u>
	<u>viviese</u>	<u>vivieses</u>	<u>viviese</u>	<u>viviésemos</u>	<u>vivieseis</u>	<u>viviesen</u>

- Many verbs have irregular preterite forms which are reflected in the stem for the imperfect subjunctive. For example:

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
dar to give	<u>diera</u>	<u>dieras</u>	<u>diera</u>	<u>diéramos</u>	<u>dierais</u>	<u>dieran</u>
	<u>diese</u>	<u>dieses</u>	<u>diese</u>	<u>diésemos</u>	<u>dieseis</u>	<u>diesen</u>
estar to be	<u>estuviera</u>	<u>estuvieras</u>	<u>estuviera</u>	<u>estuviéramos</u>	<u>estuvierais</u>	<u>estuvieran</u>
	<u>estuviese</u>	<u>estuvieses</u>	<u>estuviese</u>	<u>estuviésemos</u>	<u>estuvieseis</u>	<u>estuviesen</u>
hacer to do/make	<u>hiciera</u>	<u>hicieras</u>	<u>hiciera</u>	<u>hiciéramos</u>	<u>hicierais</u>	<u>hicieran</u>
	<u>hiciese</u>	<u>hicieses</u>	<u>hiciese</u>	<u>hiciésemos</u>	<u>hicieseis</u>	<u>hiciesen</u>
poner to put	<u>pusiera</u>	<u>pusieras</u>	<u>pusiera</u>	<u>pusiéramos</u>	<u>pusierais</u>	<u>pusieran</u>
	<u>pusiese</u>	<u>pusieses</u>	<u>pusiese</u>	<u>pusiésemos</u>	<u>pusieseis</u>	<u>pusiesen</u>

tener to have	<u>tuviera</u>	<u>tuvieras</u>	<u>tuviera</u>	<u>tuviéramos</u>	<u>tuvierais</u>	<u>tuv</u>
	<u>tuviese</u>	<u>tuvieses</u>	<u>tuviese</u>	<u>tuviésemos</u>	<u>tuvieseis</u>	<u>tuv</u>
ser to be	<u>fuera</u>	<u>fueras</u>	<u>fuera</u>	<u>fuéramos</u>	<u>fuerais</u>	<u>fue</u>
	<u>fuese</u>	<u>fueses</u>	<u>fuese</u>	<u>fuésemos</u>	<u>fueseis</u>	<u>fue</u>
venir to come	<u>viniera</u>	<u>vinieras</u>	<u>viniera</u>	<u>viniéramos</u>	<u>vinierais</u>	<u>vin</u>
	<u>viniese</u>	<u>vinieses</u>	<u>viniese</u>	<u>viniésemos</u>	<u>vinieseis</u>	<u>vin</u>

8 **Forming the imperfect subjunctive of some irregular -ir verbs**

► In some irregular -ir verbs – the ones that don't have an **i** in the **ellos** form of the preterite – **-era, -eras, -era, -éramos, -erais, -eran** or **-ese, -eses, -ese, -ésemos, -eseis, -esen** are added to the preterite stem instead of **-iera** and **-iese** and so on.

⇨ For more information on the **Preterite**, see page 104.

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
decir to say	dijera	dijeras	dijera	dijéramos	dijerais	dijeran
	dijese	dijeses	dijese	dijésemos	dijeseis	dijesen
ir to go	fuera	fueras	fuera	fuéramos	fuerais	fuera
	fuese	fueses	fuese	fuésemos	fueseis	fuesen

☑ Note that the imperfect subjunctive forms of **ir** and **ser** are identical.

Teníamos miedo de que se **fuera**.

We were afraid he might leave.

No era verdad que **fuera** ellos.

It wasn't true that it was them.

9 **Present indicative or imperfect subjunctive after si**

► Like some other conjunctions, **si** (meaning *if*) is sometimes followed by the ordinary present tense (the present indicative) and sometimes by the imperfect subjunctive.

► **si** is followed by the present indicative when talking about likely possibilities.

Si **quieres**, te dejo el coche.

If you like, I'll lend you the car.

(and you may well want to borrow the car)

Compraré un bolígrafo si **tienen**.

I'll buy a pen if they have any.

(and there may well be some pens)

> **si** is followed by the imperfect subjunctive when talking about unlikely or impossible conditions.

Si **tuviera** más dinero, me lo compraría.

If I had more money, I'd buy it.

(but I haven't got more money)

Si yo **fuera** tú, lo compraría.

If I were you, I'd buy it.

(but I'm not you)

Tip

You probably need the imperfect subjunctive in Spanish after **si** if the English sentence has *would* in it.

Key points

- ✓ After certain verbs you have to use a subjunctive in Spanish when there is a different subject in the two parts of the sentence.
- ✓ A subjunctive is also found after impersonal expressions, as well as after certain conjunctions.
- ✓ Structures with the subjunctive can often be avoided if the subject of both verbs is the same. An infinitive can often be used instead.
- ✓ The endings of the present subjunctive in regular **-ar** verbs are: **-e, -es, -e, -emos, -éis, -en**.
- ✓ The endings of the present subjunctive in regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs are: **-a, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an**.
- ✓ The endings of the imperfect subjunctive in regular **-ar** verbs are: **-ara, -aras, -ara, -áramos, -arais, -aran** or **-ase, -ases, -ase, -ásemos, -aseis, -asen**.
- ✓ The endings of the imperfect subjunctive in regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs are: **-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran** or **-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen**.
- ✓ Some verbs have irregular subjunctive forms.

The Infinitive

What is the infinitive?

The **infinitive** is a form of the verb that hasn't had any endings added to it and doesn't relate to any particular tense. In English, the infinitive is usually shown with *to*, as in *to speak, to eat, to live*.

1 Using the infinitive

- ▶ In English, the infinitive is usually thought of as being made up of two words, for example, *to speak*. In Spanish, the infinitive consists of one word and is the verb form that ends in **-ar**, **-er** or **-ir**, for example, **hablar**, **comer**, **vivir**.
- ▶ When you look up a verb in the dictionary, you will find that information is usually listed under the infinitive form.
- ▶ In Spanish, the infinitive is often used in the following ways:

- after a preposition such as **antes de** (meaning *before*), **después de** (meaning *after*)

Después de comer, fuimos a casa de Pepe.	<u>After eating</u> , we went round to Pepe's.
Salió <u>sin hacer</u> ruido.	She went out <u>without making</u> a noise.
Siempre veo la tele <u>antes de acostarme</u>.	I always watch TV <u>before going to bed</u> .

- ☑ Note that in English we always use the *-ing* form of the verb after a preposition, for example, *before going*. In Spanish you have to use the infinitive form after a preposition.

- in set phrases, particularly after adjectives or nouns

Estoy <u>encantada de poder</u> ayudarte.	I'm delighted to be able to help you.
Está <u>contento de vivir</u> aquí.	He's happy living here.
Tengo <u>ganas de salir</u>.	I feel like going out.
No <u>hace falta comprar</u> leche.	We/You don't need to buy any milk.
Me <u>dio mucha alegría</u> verla.	I was very pleased to see her.
Me <u>da miedo cruzar</u> la carretera.	I'm afraid of crossing the road.

- after another verb, sometimes as the object of it

<u>Debo llamar</u> a casa.	I must phone home.
<u>Prefiero esquiar</u>.	I prefer skiing.
<u>Me gusta escuchar</u> música.	I like listening to music.
<u>Nos encanta nadar</u>.	We love swimming.
<u>¿Te apetece ir</u> al cine?	Do you fancy going to the cinema?

- ☑ Note that, when it comes after another verb, the Spanish infinitive often corresponds to the *-ing* form in English.

- in instructions that are aimed at the general public – for example in cookery books or on signs

<u>Cocer</u> a fuego lento.	Cook on a low heat.
<u>Prohibido pisar</u> el césped.	Don't walk on the grass.

- as a noun, where in English we would use the *-ing* form of the verb

Lo importante es intentarlo.

Trying is the important thing.

- ☑ Note that, when the infinitive is the subject of another verb, it may have the article **el** before it, particularly if it starts the sentence.

El viajar tanto me resulta cansado.

I find so much travelling tiring.

Tip

Be especially careful when translating the English *-ing* form. It is often translated by the infinitive in Spanish.

2 Linking two verbs together

- There are three ways that verbs can be linked together when the second verb is an infinitive:

- with no linking word in between

¿Quieres venir?

Do you want to come?

Necesito hablar contigo.

I need to talk to you.

- with a preposition:

ir a hacer algo

to be going to do something

aprender a hacer algo

to learn to do something

dejar de hacer algo

to stop doing something

Voy a comprarme un móvil.

I'm going to buy a mobile.

Aprendimos a esquiar.

We learnt to ski.

Quiere dejar de fumar.

He wants to stop smoking.

- ☑ Note that you have to learn the preposition required for each verb.

- in set structures

tener que hacer algo

to have to do something

Tengo que salir.

I've got to go out.

Tendrías que comer más.

You should eat more.

Tuvo que devolver el dinero.

He had to pay back the money.

3 Verbs followed by the infinitive with no preposition

- Some Spanish verbs and groups of verbs can be followed by an infinitive with no preposition:

- **poder** (meaning *to be able to, can, may*), **saber** (meaning *to know how to, can*), **querer** (meaning *to want*) and **deber** (meaning *to have to, must*)

No puede venir.

He can't come.

¿Sabes esquiar?

Can you ski?

Quiere estudiar medicina.

He wants to study medicine.

Debes hacerlo.

You must do it.

- verbs like **gustar**, **encantar** and **apetecer**, where the infinitive is the subject of the verb

Me gusta estudiar.

I like studying.

Nos encanta bailar.

We love dancing.

¿Te apetece ir al cine?

Do you fancy going to the cinema?

- verbs that relate to seeing or hearing, such as **ver** (meaning *to see*) and **oír** (meaning *to hear*)

Nos ha visto llegar.

He saw us arrive.

Te he oído cantar.

I heard you singing.

- the verbs **hacer** (meaning *to make*) and **dejar** (meaning *to let*)

¡No me hagas reír!

Don't make me laugh!

Mis padres no me dejan salir por la noche.

My parents don't let me go out at night.

- the following common verbs

decidir

to decide

desear

to wish, want

esperar

to hope

evitar

to avoid

necesitar

to need

odiar

to hate

olvidar

to forget

pensar

to think

preferir

to prefer

recordar

to remember

sentir

to regret

Han decidido comprarse una casa.

They've decided to buy a house.

No desea tener más hijos.

She doesn't want to have any more children.

Espero poder ir.

I hope to be able to go.

Evita gastar demasiado dinero.

He avoids spending too much money.

Necesito salir un momento.

I need to go out for a moment.

Olvidó dejar su dirección.

She forgot to leave her address.

Pienso hacer una paella.

I'm thinking of making a paella.

Siento molestarte.

I'm sorry to bother you.

► Some of these verbs combine with infinitives to make set phrases with a special meaning:

• **querer decir**

to mean

¿Qué quiere decir eso?

What does that mean?

• **dejar caer**

to drop

Dejó caer la bandeja.

She dropped the tray.

4 Verbs followed by the preposition **a** and the infinitive

► The following verbs are the most common ones that can be followed by **a** and the infinitive:

- verbs relating to movement such as **ir** (meaning *to go*) and **venir** (meaning *to come*)

Se va a comprar un caballo.

He's going to buy a horse.

Viene a vernos.

He's coming to see us.

- the following common verbs

aprender a hacer algo

to learn to do something

comenzar a hacer algo

to begin to do something

decidirse a hacer algo

to decide to do something

empezar a hacer algo

to begin to do something

llegar a hacer algo

to manage to do something

llegar a ser algo

to become something

probar a hacer algo

to try to do something

volver a hacer algo

to do something again

Me gustaría aprender a nadar.

I'd like to learn to swim.

No llegó a terminar la carrera.

He didn't manage to finish his degree course.

Llegó a ser primer ministro.

He became prime minister.

No vuelvas a hacerlo nunca más.

Don't ever do it again.

► The following verbs can be followed by **a** and a person's name or else by **a** and a noun or pronoun referring to a person, and then by another **a** and an infinitive.

ayudar a alguien a hacer algo

to help someone to do something

enseñar a alguien a hacer algo

to teach someone to do something

invitar <u>a</u> alguien <u>a</u> hacer algo	to invite someone to do something
¿Le podrías ayudar <u>a</u> Antonia <u>a</u> fregar los platos?	Could you help Antonia do the dishes?
Le enseñó <u>a</u> su hermano <u>a</u> nadar.	He taught his brother to swim.
Los he invitado <u>a</u> tomar unas copas en casa.	I've invited them over for drinks.

5 Verbs followed by the preposition de and the infinitive

► The following verbs are the most common ones that can be followed by **de** and the infinitive:

aburrirse <u>de</u> hacer algo	to get bored with doing something
acabar <u>de</u> hacer algo	to have just done something
acordarse <u>de</u> haber hecho/ <u>de</u> hacer algo	to remember having done/doing something
alegrarse <u>de</u> hacer algo	to be glad to do something
dejar <u>de</u> hacer algo	to stop doing something
tener ganas <u>de</u> hacer algo	to want to do something
tratar <u>de</u> hacer algo	to try to do something
Me aburría <u>de</u> no poder salir de casa.	I was getting bored with not being able to leave the house.
Acabo <u>de</u> comprar un móvil.	I've just bought a mobile.
Acababan <u>de</u> llegar cuando...	They had just arrived when...
Me alegro <u>de</u> verte.	I'm glad to see you.
¿Quieres dejar <u>de</u> hablar?	Will you stop talking?
Tengo ganas <u>de</u> volver a España.	I want to go back to Spain.

6 Verbs followed by the preposition con and the infinitive

► The following verbs are the most common ones that can be followed by **con** and the infinitive:

amenazar <u>con</u> hacer algo	to threaten to do something
soñar <u>con</u> hacer algo	to dream about doing something
Amenazó <u>con</u> denunciarlos.	He threatened to report them.
Sueño <u>con</u> vivir en España.	I dream about living in Spain.

7 Verbs followed by the preposition en and the infinitive

► The verb **quedar** is the most common one that can be followed by **en** and the infinitive:

quedar <u>en</u> hacer algo	to agree to do something
Habíamos quedado <u>en</u> encontrarnos a las ocho.	We had agreed to meet at eight.

Key points

- ✓ Infinitives are found after prepositions, set phrases and in instructions to the general public.
- ✓ They can also function as the subject or object of a verb, when the infinitive corresponds to the *-ing* form in English.
- ✓ Many Spanish verbs can be followed by another verb in the infinitive.
- ✓ The two verbs may be linked by nothing at all, or by **a**, **de** or another preposition.
- ✓ The construction in Spanish does not always match the English. It's best to learn these constructions when you learn a new verb.

Prepositions after verbs

- In English, there are some phrases which are made up of verbs and prepositions, for example, *to accuse somebody of something*, *to look forward to something* and *to rely on something*.
- In Spanish there are also lots of set phrases made up of verbs and prepositions. Often the prepositions in Spanish are not the same as they are in English, so you will need to learn them. Listed below are phrases using verbs and some common Spanish prepositions.

⇒ For more information on verbs used with a preposition and the infinitive, see page 147.

1 Verbs followed by a

- **a** is often the equivalent of the English word *to* when it is used with an indirect object after verbs like **enviar** (meaning *to send*), **dar** (meaning *to give*) and **decir** (meaning *to say*).

dar algo a alguien	to give something to someone
decir algo a alguien	to say something to someone
enviar algo a alguien	to send something to someone
escribir algo a alguien	to write something to someone
mostrar algo a alguien	to show something to someone

⇒ For more information on **Indirect objects**, see page 49.

Tip

There is an important difference between Spanish and English with this type of verb. In English, you can say either *to give something to someone* or *to give someone something*. You can **NEVER** miss out **a** in Spanish in the way that you can sometimes miss out *to* in English.

- Here are some verbs taking **a** in Spanish that have a different construction in English.

asistir <u>a</u> algo	to attend something, to be at something
dirigirse <u>a</u> (un lugar)	to head for (a place)
dirigirse <u>a</u> alguien	to address somebody
jugar <u>a</u> algo	to play something (<i>sports/games</i>)
llegar <u>a</u> (un lugar)	to arrive at (a place)
oler <u>a</u> algo	to smell of something
parecerse <u>a</u> alguien/algo	to look like somebody/something
subir(se) <u>a</u> un autobús/un coche	to get on a bus/into a car
subir(se) <u>a</u> un árbol	to climb a tree
tener miedo <u>a</u> alguien	to be afraid of somebody
Este perfume huele <u>a</u> jazmín.	This perfume smells of jasmine.
¡De prisa, sube <u>a</u> coche!	Get into the car, quick!
Nunca tuvieron miedo <u>a</u> su padre.	They were never afraid of their father.

⇒ For verbs such as *gustar*, *encantar* and *faltar*, see **Verbal idioms** on page 154.

2 **Verbs followed by de**

► Here are some verbs taking **de** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

acordarse <u>de</u> algo/alguien	to remember something/somebody
alegrarse <u>de</u> algo	to be glad about something
bajarse <u>de</u> un autobús/un coche	to get off a bus/out of a car
darse cuenta <u>de</u> algo	to realize something
depender <u>de</u> algo/alguien	to depend on something/somebody
despedirse <u>de</u> alguien	to say goodbye to somebody
preocuparse <u>de</u> algo/alguien	to worry about something/somebody
quejarse <u>de</u> algo	to complain about something
reírse <u>de</u> algo/alguien	to laugh at something/somebody
salir <u>de</u> (un cuarto/un edificio)	to leave (a room/a building)
tener ganas <u>de</u> algo	to want something
trabajar <u>de</u> (camarero/secretario)	to work as (a waiter/secretary)
tratarse <u>de</u> algo/alguien	to be a question of something/to be about somebody
Nos acordamos muy bien <u>de</u> aquellas vacaciones.	We remember that holiday very well.
Se bajó <u>de</u> coche.	He got out of the car.

No depende **de** mí.

It doesn't depend on me.

Se preocupa mucho **de** su apariencia.

He worries a lot about his appearance.

3 Verbs followed by con

► Here are some verbs taking **con** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

contar **con** alguien/algo

to rely on somebody/something

encontrarse **con** alguien

to meet somebody (*by chance*)

enfadarse **con** alguien

to get annoyed with somebody

hablar **con** alguien

to talk to somebody

soñar **con** alguien/algo

to dream about
somebody/something

Cuento **contigo**.

I'm relying on you.

Me encontré **con** ella al entrar en el banco.

I met her as I was going into the bank.

¿Puedo hablar **con** usted un momento?

May I talk to you for a moment?

4 Verbs followed by en

► Here are some verbs taking **en** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

entrar **en** (un edificio/un cuarto)

to enter, go into (a building/a room)

pensar **en** algo/alguien

to think about something/somebody

No quiero pensar **en** eso.

I don't want to think about that.

5 Verbs followed by por

► Here are some verbs taking **por** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

interesarse **por** algo/alguien

to ask about something/somebody

preguntar **por** alguien

to ask for/about somebody

preocuparse **por** algo/alguien

to worry about something/somebody

Me interesaba mucho **por** la arqueología.

I was very interested in archaeology.

Se preocupa mucho **por** su apariencia.

He worries a lot about his appearance.

6 Verbs taking a direct object in Spanish but not in English

► In English there are a few verbs that are followed by *at*, *for* or *to* which, in Spanish, are not followed by any preposition other than the personal **a**.

⇒ For more information on *Personal a*, see page 182.

mirar algo/a alguien

to look at something/somebody

escuchar algo/a alguien	to listen to something/somebody
buscar algo/a alguien	to look for something/somebody
pedir algo	to ask for something
esperar algo/a alguien	to wait for something/somebody
pagar algo	to pay for something
Mira esta foto.	Look at this photo.
Me gusta escuchar música.	I like listening to music.
Estoy buscando las gafas.	I'm looking for my glasses.
Pidió una taza de té.	He asked for a cup of tea.
Estamos esperando el tren.	We're waiting for the train.
Ya he pagado el billete.	I've already paid for my ticket.
Estoy buscando a mi hermano.	I'm looking for my brother.

Key points

- ✓ The prepositions used with Spanish verbs are often very different from those used in English, so make sure you learn common expressions involving prepositions in Spanish.
- ✓ The most common prepositions used with verbs in Spanish are **a**, **de**, **con**, **en** and **por**.
- ✓ Some Spanish verbs are not followed by a preposition, but are used with a preposition in English.

Verbal Idioms

1 Present tense of **gustar**

- You will probably already have come across the phrase **me gusta...** meaning *I like...* . Actually, **gustar** means literally *to please*, and if you remember this, you will be able to use **gustar** much more easily.

Me gusta el chocolate.	I like chocolate. (<i>literally: chocolate <u>pleases</u> me</i>)
Me gustan los animales.	I like animals. (<i>literally: animals <u>please</u> me</i>)
Nos gusta el español.	We like Spanish. (<i>literally: Spanish <u>pleases</u> us</i>)
Nos gustan los españoles.	We like Spanish people. (<i>literally: Spanish people <u>please</u> us</i>)

- Even though **chocolate**, **animales**, and so on, come after **gustar**, they are the subject of the verb (the person or thing performing the action) and therefore the endings of **gustar** change to agree with them.
- When the thing that you like is singular, you use **gusta** (*third person singular*), and when the thing that you like is plural, you use **gustan** (*third person plural*).

Le **gusta** Francia. He/She likes France. (*literally: France pleases him/her*)

Le **gustan** los caramelos. He/She likes sweets. (*literally: Sweets please him/her*)

☑ Note that **me**, **te**, **le**, **nos**, **os** and **les**, which are used with **gustar**, are indirect object pronouns.

⇨ For more information on *Indirect object pronouns*, see page 49.

2 Other tenses of gustar

► You can use **gustar** in other tenses in Spanish.

Les gustó la fiesta.	They liked the party.
Les gustaron los fuegos artificiales.	They liked the fireworks.
Te va a gustar la película.	You'll like the film.
Te van a gustar las fotos.	You'll like the photos.
Les ha gustado mucho el museo.	They really liked the museum.
Les han gustado mucho los cuadros.	They really liked the paintings.

► You can also use **más** with **gustar** to say what you prefer.

A mí me **gusta más** el rojo. I prefer the red one. (*literally: the red one pleases me more*)

A mí me **gustan más** los rojos. I prefer the red ones. (*literally: the red ones please me more*)

3 Other verbs like gustar

► There are several other verbs which behave in the same way as **gustar**:

• **encantar**

Me **encanta** el flamenco. I love flamenco.

Me **encantan** los animales. I love animals.

• **faltar**

Le **faltaba** un botón. He had a button missing.

Le **faltaban** tres dientes. He had three teeth missing.

• **quedar**

No les **queda** nada. They have nothing left.

Sólo nos **quedan** dos kilómetros. We've only got two kilometres left.

• **doler**

Le **dolía** la cabeza. His head hurt.

Le **dolían** las muelas. His teeth hurt.

- **interesar**

Te **interesará** el libro.

The book will interest you.

Te **interesarán** sus noticias.

His news will interest you.

- **importar**

No me **importa** la lluvia.

The rain doesn't matter to me. *or*

I don't mind the rain.

Me **importan** mucho mis estudios.

My studies matter to me a lot.

- **hacer falta**

Nos **hace** falta un ordenador.

We need a computer.

Nos **hacen** falta libros.

We need books.

Grammar Extra!

All the examples given above are in the third persons singular and plural as these are by far the most common. However, it is also possible to use these verbs in other forms.

Creo que le gusta.

I think he likes you. (*literally: I think you please him*)

4 **Verbal idioms used with another verb**

► In English you can say *I like playing football*, *we love swimming* and so on, and in Spanish you can also use another verb with most of the verbs like **gustar**. However, the verb form you use for the second verb in Spanish is the infinitive.

Le **gusta** jugar al fútbol.

He/She likes playing football.

No me **gusta** bailar.

I don't like dancing.

Nos **encanta** estudiar.

We love studying.

No me **importa** tener que esperar.

I don't mind having to wait.

⇒ For more information on the **Infinitive**, see page 144.

Key points

- ✓ There are a number of common verbs in Spanish which are used in the opposite way to English, for example, **gustar**, **encantar**, **hacer falta**, and so on. With all these verbs, the object of the English verb is the subject of the Spanish verb.
- ✓ The endings of these verbs change according to whether the thing liked or needed and so on is singular or plural.

✓ All these verbs can be followed by another verb in the infinitive.

NEGATIVES

What is a negative?

A **negative** question or statement is one which contains a word such as *not*, *never* or *nothing* and is used to say that something is not happening, is not true or is absent.

1 **no**

- In English, we often make sentences negative by adding *don't*, *doesn't* or *didn't* before the verb. In Spanish you simply add **no** (meaning *not*) before the main verb.

Positive		Negative	
Trabaja.	He works.	→ No trabaja.	He doesn't work.
Comen.	They eat.	→ No comen.	They don't eat.
Salió.	She went out.	→ No salió.	She didn't go out.
Lo he visto.	I've seen it.	→ No lo he visto.	I haven't seen it.
Sabe nadar.	He can swim.	→ No sabe nadar.	He can't swim.

Tip

NEVER translate *don't*, *doesn't*, *didn't* using **hacer**.

- Where there is a subject (the person doing the action) in the sentence, put **no** between the subject and the verb.

Juan no vive aquí.

Juan doesn't live here.

Mi hermana no lee mucho.

My sister doesn't read much.

Mis padres no han llamado.

My parents haven't called.

Él no lo comprenderá.

He won't understand.

- ☑ Note that the Spanish word **no** also means *no* in answer to a question.

- Where the subject is only shown by the verb ending, **no** goes before the verb.

No tenemos tiempo.

We haven't got time.

Todavía no ha llegado.

He hasn't arrived yet.

No hemos comido.

We haven't eaten.

No llevará mucho tiempo.

It won't take long.

- If there are any object pronouns (for example, **me**, **te**, **lo**, **los**, **le** and so on) before the verb, **no** goes before them.

No lo he visto.

I didn't see it.

No me gusta el fútbol.

I don't like football.

- In phrases consisting only of *not* and another word, such as *not now* or *not me*, the Spanish **no** usually goes after the other word.

Ahora no. Not now.

Yo no. Not me.

Todavía no. Not yet.

- Some phrases have a special construction in Spanish.

Espero que sí. I hope so. → **Espero que no.** I hope not.

Creo que sí. I think so. → **Creo que no.** I don't think so.

2 Other negative words

- In Spanish, you can form negatives using pairs and groups of words, as you can in English.

- **no ... nunca** never *or* not ... ever

No la veo nunca. I never see her *or* I don't ever see her.

- **no ... jamás** never *or* not ... ever

No la veo jamás. I never see her *or* I don't ever see her.

- **no ... nada** nothing *or* not ... anything

No ha dicho nada. He has said nothing *or* He hasn't said anything.

- **no ... nadie** nobody *or* not ... anybody

No hablaron con nadie. They spoke to nobody *or* They didn't speak to anybody.

- **no ... tampoco** not ... either

Yo no la vi. – Yo tampoco. I didn't see her. – Neither did I *or* I didn't either *or* Nor did I.

A él no le gusta el café y a mí tampoco. He doesn't like coffee and neither do I.

- **no ... ni ... ni** neither ... nor

No vinieron ni Carlos ni Ana. Neither Carlos nor Ana came.

- **no ... más** no longer *or* not .. any more

No te veré más. I won't see you any more.

- **no ... ningún/ninguna** + *noun* no *or* not ... any

No tiene ningún interés en ir. She has no interest in going.

- Most of these negative words can also be used without **no** provided they come before any verb.

Nunca or Jamás la veo. I never see her.

Nadie vino. No one came.

Ni Pedro ni Pablo fuman. Neither Pedro nor Pablo smokes.

¿Quién te ha dicho eso? – Who told you that? – No one.

Nadie.

¿Qué has hecho? – Nada.

What have you done? –
Nothing.

- Sometimes negative expressions combine with each other.

Nunca hacen nada.

They never do anything.

Nunca viene nadie.

No one ever comes.

No lo haré nunca más.

I'll never do it again.

3 Word order with negatives

- In English you can put words like *never* and *ever* between *have/has/had* and the past participle, for example, *We have never been to Argentina.* You should never separate **he, has, ha, había** and so on from the past participle of the verb in Spanish.

Nunca hemos estado en Argentina.

We have never been to Argentina.

Nunca había visto nada así.

I had never seen anything like this.

Ninguno de nosotros había esquiado nunca.

None of us had ever skied.

- ⇒ For more information on *Past participles*, see page [115](#).

Key points

- ✓ The Spanish word **no** is equivalent to both *no* and *not* in English.
- ✓ You can make sentences negative by putting **no** before the verb (and before any object pronouns that are in front of the verb).
- ✓ Other negative words also exist, such as **nunca**, **nadie** and **nada**. Use them in combination with **no**, with the verb sandwiched in between. Most of them also work on their own provided they go before any verb.
- ✓ Never insert negative words, or anything else, between **he**, **has**, **ha**, **había** and so on and the past participle.

QUESTIONS

What is a question?

A **question** is a sentence which is used to ask someone about something and which often has the verb in front of the subject. Questions often include a question word such as *why, where, who, which* or *how*.

Asking questions in Spanish

There are three main ways of asking questions in Spanish:

- by making your voice go up at the end of the sentence
- by changing normal word order
- by using a question word

Tip

Don't forget the opening question mark in Spanish. It goes at the beginning of the question or of the question part of the sentence.

¿No quieres tomar Wouldn't you like something to
algo? eat or drink?

Eres inglés, You're English, aren't you?

¿verdad?

1 Asking a question by making your voice go up

- ▶ If you are expecting the answer *yes* or *no*, there is a very simple way of asking a question. You keep the word order exactly as it would be in a normal sentence but you turn it into a question by making your voice go up at the end.

¿Hablas español?	Do you speak Spanish?
¿Es profesor?	Is he a teacher?
¿Hay leche?	Is there any milk?
¿Te gusta la música?	Do you like music?

- ▶ When the subject (the person or thing doing the action) of the verb is a noun, pronoun or name it can be given before the verb, just as in an ordinary sentence. But you turn the statement into a question by making your voice go up at the end.

¿Tu hermana ha comprado pan?	Did your sister buy any bread?
¿Tú lo has hecho?	Did you do it?
¿Tu padre te ha visto?	Did your father see you?
¿El diccionario está aquí?	Is the dictionary here?

2 Asking a question by changing word order

- ▶ When the subject of the verb is specified, another even more common way of asking questions is to change the word order so that the verb comes before the subject instead of after it.

¿Lo has hecho tú?

Did you do it?

¿Te ha visto tu padre?

Did your father see you?

¿Está el diccionario aquí?

Is the dictionary here?

☑ Note that the position of object pronouns is not affected.

⇒ For more information on **Word order with object pronouns**, see pages 47, 50 and 52.

Grammar Extra!

If the verb has an object, such as *any bread* in *Did your sister buy any bread?*, the subject comes after the object, provided the object is short.

¿Ha comprado pan tu
hermana?

Did your sister buy any
bread?

¿Vio la película tu novio?

Did your boyfriend see the
film?

If the object is made up of several words, the subject goes before it.

Se han comprado tus padres

Have your parents bought
that

aquella casa de que me
hablaste?

house you told me about?

When there is an adverbial phrase (*to the party, in Barcelona*) after the verb, the subject can go before or after the adverbial phrase.

¿Viene a la fiesta Andrés? or ¿Viene Andrés a la fiesta? Is Andrés coming to the party?

3 Asking a question by using a question word

- Question words are words like *when, what, who, which, where* and *how* that are used to ask for information. In Spanish, all question words have an accent on them.

¿adónde?	where ... to?
¿cómo?	how?
¿cuál/cuáles?	which?
¿cuándo?	when?
¿cuánto/cuánta?	how much?
¿cuántos/cuántas?	how many?
¿dónde?	where?
¿para qué?	what for?
¿por qué?	why?
¿qué?	what?, which?
¿quién?	who?

Tip

Be careful not to mix up **por qué** (meaning *why*) with **porque** (meaning *because*).

¿ <u>Cuándo</u> se fue?	When did he go?
¿ <u>Qué</u> te pasa?	What's the matter?
¿ <u>Qué</u> chaqueta te vas a poner?	Which jacket are you going to wear?
¿ <u>Cuál</u> de los dos quieres?	Which do you want?
¿ <u>Cuánto</u> azúcar quieres?	How much sugar do you want?
¿ <u>Cuánto</u> tiempo llevas esperando?	How long have you been waiting?

⇒ For more information on question words, see *Interrogative adjectives* on page 32 and *Interrogative pronouns* on page 65.

- When the question starts with a question word that isn't the subject of the verb, the noun or pronoun (if given) that is the subject of the verb goes after it.

¿De qué color es <u>la moqueta</u> ?	What colour's the carpet?
¿A qué hora comienza <u>el concierto</u> ?	What time does the concert start?
¿Dónde están <u>tus pantalones</u> ?	Where are your trousers?
¿Adónde iba <u>tu padre</u> ?	Where was your father going?
¿Cómo están <u>tus padres</u> ?	How are your parents?
¿Cuándo volverán <u>ustedes</u> ?	When will you come back?

4 Which question word to use?

► **qué** or **cuál** or **cuáles** can be used to mean *which*:

- always use **qué** before a noun

¿Qué chaqueta te vas a poner? Which jacket are you going to wear?

- otherwise use **cuál** (*singular*) or **cuáles** (*plural*)

¿Cuál quieres? Which (one), do you want?

¿Cuáles quieres? Which (ones), do you want?

► **quién** or **quiénes** can be used to mean *who*:

- use **quién** when asking about one person

¿Quién ganó? Who won?

- use **quiénes** when asking about more than one person

¿Quiénes estaban? Who was there?

☑ Note that you need to put the personal **a** before **quién** and **quiénes** when it acts as an object.

¿A quién viste? Who did you see?

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page [182](#).

► **de quién** or **de quiénes** can be used to mean *whose*:

- use **de quién** when there is likely to be one owner

¿De quién es este abrigo?

Whose coat is this?

- use **de quiénes** when there is likely to be more than one owner

¿De quiénes son estos abrigos?

Whose coats are these?

☑ Note that the structure in Spanish is the equivalent of *Whose is this coat?/Whose are these coats?* Don't try putting **¿de quién?** or **¿de quiénes?** immediately before a noun.

➤ **qué, cómo, cuál** and **cuáles** can all be used to mean *what* although **qué** is the most common translation:

- use **cómo** not **qué** when asking someone to repeat something that you didn't hear properly

¿Cómo (has dicho)?

What (did you say)?

- use **¿cuál es ... ?** and **¿cuáles son ... ?** to mean *what is ... ?* and *what/are ... ?* when you aren't asking for a definition

¿Cuál es la capital de Francia? What's the capital of France?

¿Cuál es su número de teléfono?

What's his telephone number?

- use **¿qué es ... ?** and **¿qué son ... ?** to mean *what is ... ?* and *what are ... ?* when you are asking for a definition

¿Qué son los genes?

What are genes?

- always use **qué** to mean *what* before another noun

¿Qué hora es?

What time is it?

¿Qué asignaturas estudias?

What subjects are you studying?

Tip

You can finish an English question (or sentence) with a preposition such as *about*, for example, *Who did you write to?*; *What are you talking about?* You can never end a Spanish question or sentence with a preposition.

¿Con quién hablaste? Who did you speak to?

Grammar Extra!

All the questions we have looked at so far have been straight questions, otherwise known as direct questions. However, sometimes instead of asking directly, for example, *Where is it?* or *Why did you do it?*, we ask the question in a more roundabout way, for example, *Can you tell me where it is?* or *Please tell me why you did it*. These are called indirect questions.

In indirect questions in English we say *where it is* instead of *where is it* and *why you did it* instead of *why did you do it*, but in Spanish you still put the subject after the verb.

¿Sabes adónde iba tu padre? Do you know where your father was going?

¿Puedes decirme para qué Can you tell me what

sirven los diccionarios?

dictionaries are for?

The subject also goes AFTER the verb in Spanish when you report a question in indirect speech.

Quería saber adónde iba He wanted to know where my
mi padre. father was going.

- ☑ Note that you still put accents on question words in Spanish even when they are in indirect and reported questions or when they come after expressions of uncertainty:

No sé qué hacer. I don't know what to do.

No sabemos por qué se fue. We don't know why he left.

5 Negative questions

- When you want to make a negative question, put **no** before the verb in the same way that you do in statements (non-questions).

¿No vienes? Aren't you coming?

¿No lo has visto? Didn't you see it?

- You can also use **o no** at the end of a question in the same way that we can ask *or not* in English.

¿Vienes o no? Are you coming or not?

¿Lo quieres o no? Do you want it or not?

6 Short questions

- In English we sometimes check whether our facts and beliefs are correct by putting *isn't it?*, *don't they?*, *are they?* and so on at the end of a comment. In Spanish, you can add **¿verdad?** in the same way.

Hace calor, ¿verdad?	It's hot, <u>isn't it?</u>
Te gusta, ¿verdad?	You like it, <u>don't you?</u>
No te olvidarás, ¿verdad?	You won't forget, <u>will you?</u>
No vino, ¿verdad?	He didn't come, <u>did he?</u>

- You can also use **¿no?**, especially after positive comments.

Hace calor, ¿no?	It's hot, <u>isn't it?</u>
Te gusta, ¿no?	You like it, <u>don't you?</u>

7 Answering questions

- To answer a question which requires a *yes* or *no* answer, just use **sí** or **no**.

¿Te gusta? – Sí/No.	Do you like it? – Yes, I do/No, I don't.
¿Está aquí? – Sí/No.	Is he here? – Yes he is/No, he isn't.
¿Tienes prisa? – Sí/No.	Are you in a hurry? – Yes, I am/No, I'm not.
No lo has hecho, ¿verdad? – Sí/No	You haven't done it, have you? - Yes, I have/No, I haven't.

- You can also often answer **sí** or **no** followed by the verb in question. In negative answers this may mean that you say **no**

twice.

Quieres acompañarme? Would you like to come with me?

– **Sí, quiero.** – Yes, I would.

¿Vas a ir a la fiesta? – Are you going to the party? – No,

No, no voy. I'm not.

Key points

- ✓ You ask a question in Spanish by making your voice go up at the end of the sentence, by changing normal word order, and by using question words.
- ✓ Question words always have an accent on them.
- ✓ To make a negative question, add **no** before the verb.
- ✓ You can add **¿verdad?** to check whether your facts or beliefs are correct.

ADVERBS

What is an adverb?

An **adverb** is a word usually used with verbs, adjectives or other adverbs that gives more information about when, how, where, or in what circumstances something happens, or to what degree something is true, for example, *quickly*, *happily*, *now*, *extremely*, *very*.

How adverbs are used

- In general, adverbs are used together with verbs, adjectives and other adverbs, for example, *act quickly*; *smile cheerfully*; *rather ill*; *a lot happier*; *really slowly*; *very well*.
- Adverbs can also relate to the whole sentence. In this case they often tell you what the speaker is thinking or feeling.

Fortunately, Jan had already left.

How adverbs are formed

1 The basic rules

- In English, adverbs that tell you how something happened are often formed by adding *-ly* to an adjective, for example, *sweet* → *sweetly*. In Spanish, you form this kind of adverb by adding **-mente** to the feminine singular form of the adjective.

Masculine adjective	Feminine adjective	Adverb	Meaning
lento	lenta	lentamente	slowly
normal	normal	normalmente	normally

Habla muy lentamente.

He speaks very slowly.

¡Hazlo inmediatamente!

Do it immediately!

Normalmente llego a las nueve.

I normally arrive at nine o'clock.

📌 Note that adverbs NEVER change their endings in Spanish to agree with anything.

Tip

You don't have to worry about adding or removing accents on the adjective when you add **-mente**; they stay as they are.

fácil easy → **fácilmente** easily

Grammar Extra!

When there are two or more adverbs joined by a conjunction such as **y** (meaning *and*) or **pero** (meaning *but*), leave out the **-mente** ending on all but the last adverb.

Lo hicieron lenta pero eficazmente.

They did it slowly but efficiently.

Use the form **recién** rather than **recientemente** (meaning *recently*) before a past participle (the form of the verb ending in **-ado** and **-ido** in regular verbs).

El comedor está recién pintado. The dining room has just been painted.

⇒ For more information on *Past participles*, see page [115](#).

In Spanish, adverbs ending in **-mente** are not as common as adverbs ending in **-ly** in English. For this reason, you will come across other ways of expressing an adverb in Spanish, for example, **con** used with a noun or **de manera** used with an adjective.

Conduce con cuidado. Drive carefully.

Todos estos cambios ocurren de manera natural. All these changes happen naturally.

2 Irregular adverbs

- ▶ The adverb that comes from **bueno** (meaning *good*) is **bien** (meaning *well*). The adverb that comes from **malo** (meaning *bad*) is **mal** (meaning *badly*).

Habla bien el español. He speaks Spanish well.

Está muy mal escrito. It's very badly written.

- ▶ Additionally, there are some other adverbs in Spanish which are exactly the same as the related masculine singular adjective:

- **alto** (adjective: *high, loud*; adverb: *high, loudly*)

El avión volaba alto sobre las montañas. The plane flew high over the mountains.

Pepe habla muy alto. Pepe talks very loudly.

- **bajo** (adjective: *low, quiet*; adverb: *low, quietly*)

El avión volaba muy bajo. The plane was flying very low.

¡Habla bajo! Speak quietly.

- **barato** (adjective: *cheap*; adverb: *cheaply*)

Aquí se come muy barato. You can eat really cheaply here.

- **claro** (adjective: *clear*; adverb: *clearly*)

Lo oí muy claro. I heard it very clearly.

- **derecho** (adjective: *right, straight*; adverb: *straight*)

Vino derecho hacia mí. He came straight towards me.

- **fuerte** (adjective: *loud, hard*; adverb: *loudly, hard*)

Habla muy fuerte. He talks very loudly.

No lo golpees tan fuerte. Don't hit it so hard.

- **rápido** (adjective: *fast, quick*; adverb: *fast, quickly*)

Conduces demasiado rápido. You drive too fast.

Lo hice tan rápido como pude. I did it as quickly as I could.

☑ Note that, when used as adverbs, these words do not agree with anything.

⇒ For more information on words which can be both adjectives and adverbs, see page 175.

Grammar Extra!

Sometimes an adjective is used in Spanish where in English we would use an adverb.

Esperaban impacientes. They were waiting impatiently.

Vivieron muy felices. They lived very happily.

☑ Note that these Spanish adjectives describe the person or thing being talked about and therefore MUST agree with them.

Often you could equally well use an adverb or an adverbial expression in Spanish.

Esperaban impacientemente or con impaciencia.

They were waiting impatiently.

Key points

- ✓ To form adverbs that tell you how something happens, you can usually add **-mente** to the feminine singular adjective in Spanish.
- ✓ Adverbs don't agree with anything.

- ✓ Some Spanish adverbs are irregular, as in English.
- ✓ Some Spanish adverbs are identical in form to their corresponding adjectives; when used as adverbs, they never agree with anything.

Comparatives and superlatives of adverbs

1 Comparative adverbs

What is a comparative adverb?

A **comparative adverb** is one which, in English, has *-er* on the end of it or *more* or *less* in front of it, for example, *earlier*, *later*, *more/less often*.

- Adverbs can be used to make comparisons in Spanish, just as they can in English. The comparative of adverbs (*more often*, *more efficiently*, *faster*) is formed using the same phrases as for adjectives:

- **más ... (que)** more ... (than)
- **más rápido (que)** faster (than), more quickly (than)
- **Corre más rápido que tú.** He runs faster than you do.
- **menos ... (que)** less ... (than)
- **menos rápido (que)** less fast (than), less quickly (than)
- **Conduce menos rápido que** He drives less fast than you

tú.

do.

2 Superlative adverbs

What is a superlative adverb?

A **superlative adverb** is one which, in English, has *-est* on the end of it or *most* or *least* in front of it, for example, *soonest*, *most/least often*.

- The superlative of adverbs (*the most often*, *the most efficiently*, *the fastest*) is formed in the same way in Spanish as the comparative, using **más** and **menos**. In this case they mean *the most* and *the least*.

María es la que corre más rápido. Maria is the one who runs (the) fastest.

la chica que sabe más the girl who knows (the) most

la chica que sabe menos the girl who knows (the) least

EI que llegó menos tarde fue Miguel. Miguel was the one who arrived least late.

- 📌 Note that even though comparative and superlative adverbs are usually identical in Spanish, you can tell which one is meant by the rest of the sentence.

3 Irregular comparative and superlative adverbs

- Some common Spanish adverbs have irregular comparatives and superlatives.

Adverb	Meaning	Comparative	Meaning	Superlative	Meaning
bien	well	mejor	better	mejor	(the) best
mal	badly	peor	worse	peor	(the) worst
mucho	a lot	más	more	más	(the) most
poco	little	menos	less	menos	(the) least

La conozco **mejor** que tú. I know her better than you do.

¿Quién lo hace **mejor**? Who does it (the) best?

Ahora salgo **más/menos**. I go out more/less these days.

Tip

When saying *more than*, *less than* or *fewer than* followed by a number, use **más** and **menos de** rather than **más** and **menos que**.

más/menos de veinte more/fewer than twenty
cajas boxes

☑ Note that in phrases like *it's the least one can expect* or *it's the least I can do*, where the adverb is qualified by further information, in Spanish you have to put **lo** before the adverb.

Es lo menos que se puede It's the least one can
esperar. expect.

4 Other ways of making comparisons

► There are other ways of making comparisons in Spanish:

- **tanto como** as much as

No lee tanto como tú. He doesn't read as much as you.

- **tan ... como** as ... as

Vine tan pronto como pude. I came as fast as I could.

Key points

- ✓ **más** + adverb (+ **que**) = *more* + adverb + (*than*)
- ✓ **menos** + adverb (+ **que**) = *less* + adverb + (*than*)
- ✓ **más** + adverb = (*the*) *most* + adverb
- ✓ **menos** + adverb = (*the*) *least* + adverb
- ✓ There are a few irregular comparative and superlative adverbs.
- ✓ There are other ways of making comparisons in Spanish:
tanto como, tan ... como.

Common adverbs

1 One-word adverbs not ending in -mente

- There are some common adverbs that do not end in **-mente**, most of which give more information about when or where something happens or to what degree something is true.
- **ahí** there

¡Ahí están!

There they are!

- **ahora** now

¿Dónde vamos ahora?

Where are we going now?

- **allá** there

allá arriba

up there

- **allí** there

Allí está.

There it is.

- **anoche** last night

Anoche llovió.

It rained last night.

- **anteanoche** the night before last

Anteanoche nevó.

It snowed the night before last.

- **anteayer** the day before yesterday

Anteayer hubo tormenta.

There was a storm the day before yesterday.

- **antes** before

Esta película ya la he visto antes. I've seen this film before.

- **apenas** hardly

Apenas podía levantarse. He could hardly stand up.

- **aquí** here

Aquí está el informe. Here's the report.

- **arriba** above, upstairs

Visto desde arriba parece más pequeño. Seen from above it looks smaller.

Arriba están los dormitorios. The bedrooms are upstairs.

- **atrás** behind

Yo me quedé atrás. I stayed behind.

- **aun** even

Aun sentado me duele la Even when I'm sitting down, my pierna. leg hurts.

- **aún** still, yet

¿Aún te duele? Does it still hurt?

Tip

The following mnemonic (memory jogger) should help you remember when to use **aun** and when to use **aún**:
Even **aun** doesn't have an accent.

aún still has an accent.
aún hasn't lost its accent yet.

- **ayer** yesterday

Ayer me compré un bolso. I bought a handbag yesterday.

- **casi** almost

Son **casi** las cinco. It's almost five o'clock.

- **cerca** near

El colegio está muy **cerca**. The school is very near.

- **claro** clearly

Lo oí muy **claro**. I heard it very clearly.

- **debajo** underneath

Miré **debajo**. I looked underneath.

- **dentro** inside

¿Qué hay **dentro**? What's inside?

- **despacio** slowly

Conduce **despacio**. Drive slowly.

- **después** afterwards

Después estábamos muy cansados.

We were very tired afterwards.

- **detrás** behind

Vienen detrás. They're coming along behind.

- **enfrente** opposite

la casa de enfrente the house opposite

- **enseguida** straightaway

La ambulancia llegó enseguida. The ambulance arrived straightaway.

- **entonces** then

¿Qué hiciste entonces? What did you do then?

- **hasta** even

Estudia hasta cuando está de vacaciones. He studies even when he's on holiday.

- **hoy** today

Hoy no tenemos clase. We haven't any lessons today.

- **jamás** never

Jamás he visto nada I've never seen anything like

parecido.

it.

- lejos far

¿Está lejos?

Is it far?

- luego then, later

Luego fuimos al cine.

Then we went to the cinema.

- muy very

Estoy muy cansada.

I'm very tired.

- no no, not

No, no me gusta.

No. I don't like it.

- nunca never

No viene nunca.

He never comes.

‘¿Has estado alguna vez
en

‘Have you ever been to
Argentina?’

Argentina?’ – ‘No,
nunca.’

– ‘No, never.’

- pronto soon, early

Llegarán pronto.

They'll be here soon.

¿Por qué has llegado tan
pronto ?

Why have you arrived so
early?

- **quizás** perhaps

Quizás está cansado.

Perhaps he's tired.

☑ Note that you use the present subjunctive after **quizás** if referring to the future.

Quizás venga mañana.

Perhaps he'll come tomorrow.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page [134](#).

- **sí** yes

¿Te apetece un café? – Sí, gracias.

Do you fancy a coffee? – Yes, please.

- **siempre** always

Siempre dicen lo mismo.

They always say the same thing.

- **solo** only

Solo cuesta tres euros.

It only costs three euros.

- **también** also, too

A mí también me gusta.

I like it too.

- **tampoco** either, neither

Yo tampoco lo compré.

I didn't buy it either.

Yo no la vi. – Yo tampoco.

I didn't see her. – Neither did I.

- **tan** as, so

Vine **tan pronto como** pude. I came as fast as I could.

Habla **tan deprisa que no** la entiendo. She speaks so fast that I can't understand her.

- **tarde** late

Se está haciendo **tarde**. It's getting late.

- **temprano** early

Tengo que levantarme **temprano**. I've got to get up early.

- **todavía** still, yet, even

Todavía tengo dos. I've still got two.

Todavía no han llegado. They haven't arrived yet.

mejor todavía even better

- **ya** already

Ya lo he hecho. I've already done it.

2 Words which are used both as adjectives and adverbs

- **bastante**, **demasiado**, **tanto**, **mucho** and **poco** can be used both as adjectives and as adverbs. When they are adjectives, their endings change in the feminine and plural to agree with what they describe. When they are adverbs, the endings don't change.



	Adjective use	Adverb use
<p>bastante enough; quite a lot; quite</p>	<p>Hay <u>bastantes</u> libros. There are enough books.</p>	<p>Ya has comido <u>bastante.</u> You've had enough to eat. Son <u>bastante</u> ricos. They are quite rich.</p>
<p>demasiado too much (<i>plural:</i> too many); too</p>	<p><u>demasiada</u> mantequilla too much butter <u>demasiados</u> libros too many books</p>	<p>He comido <u>demasiado.</u> I've eaten too much. Llegamos <u>demasiado</u> tarde. We arrived too late.</p>
<p>tanto as much (<i>plural:</i> as many); as often</p>	<p>Ahora no bebo <u>tanta</u> leche. I don't drink as much milk these days. Tengo <u>tantas</u> cosas que hacer. I've so many things to do.</p>	<p>Se preocupa <u>tanto</u> que no puede dormir. He worries so much that he can't sleep. Ahora no la veo <u>tanto.</u> I don't see her so often now.</p>
<p>mucho a lot (of), much (<i>plural:</i> many)</p>	<p>Había <u>mucha</u> gente. There were a lot of people.</p>	<p>¿Lees <u>mucho?</u> Do you read a lot? ¿Está <u>mucho</u> más</p>

	<u>muchas cosas</u> a lot of things	lejos? Is it much further?
poco little, not much, (<i>plural</i> : few, not many); not very	Hay <u>poca</u> leche. There isn't much milk. Tiene <u>pocos</u> amigos. He hasn't got many friends.	Habla muy <u>poco</u>. He speaks very little. Es <u>poco</u> sociable. He's not very sociable.

Tip

Don't confuse **poco**, which means *little, not much* or *not very*, with **un poco**, which means *a little* or *a bit*.

Come poco. He eats little.

¿Me das un poco? Can I have a bit?

- **más** and **menos** can also be used both as adjectives and adverbs. However, they **NEVER** change their endings, even when used as adjectives.

	Adjective use	Adverb use
más more	No tengo <u>más</u> dinero. I haven't any more money.	Es <u>más</u> inteligente que yo. He's more intelligent than

	más libros more books	I am. Mi hermano trabaja más ahora. My brother works more now.
menos less; fewer	menos mantequilla less butter Había menos gente que ayer. There were fewer people than yesterday.	Estoy menos sorprendida que tú. I'm less surprised than you are. Trabaja menos que yo. He doesn't work as hard as I do.

3 Adverbs made up of more than one word

- Just as in English, some Spanish adverbs are made up of two or more words instead of just one.

a veces	sometimes
a menudo	often
de vez en cuando	from time to time
todo el tiempo	all the time
hoy en día	nowadays
en seguida	immediately

Key points

- ✓ There are a number of common adverbs in Spanish which do not end in **-mente**.
- ✓ **bastante**, **demasiado**, **tanto**, **mucho** and **poco** can be used both as adjectives and as adverbs. Their endings change in the feminine and plural when they are adjectives, but when they are adverbs their endings do not change.
- ✓ **más** and **menos** can be both adjectives and adverbs – their endings never change.
- ✓ A number of Spanish adverbs are made up of more than one word.

Position of adverbs

1 Adverbs with verbs

- In English, adverbs can come in various places in a sentence, at the beginning, in the middle or at the end.

I'm never coming back.

See you soon!

Suddenly, the phone rang.

I'd really like to come.

- In Spanish, the rules for the position of adverbs in a sentence are more fixed. The adverb can either go immediately after the verb or before it for emphasis.

No conocemos todavía al nuevo médico.

We still haven't met the new doctor.

Todavía estoy esperando. I'm still waiting.

Siempre le regalaban flores. They always gave her flowers.

- When the adverb goes with a verb in the perfect tense or in the pluperfect, you can **NEVER** put the adverb between **haber** and the past participle.

Lo he hecho ya. I've already done it.

No ha estado nunca en Italia. She's never been to Italy.

⇒ For more information on the *Perfect tense*, see page [115](#).

2 Adverbs with adjectives and adverbs

- The adverb normally goes **before** any adjective or adverb it is used with.

un sombrero muy bonito a very nice hat

hablar demasiado alto to talk too loudly

Key points

- ✓ Adverbs follow the verb in most cases.
- ✓ Adverbs can go before verbs for emphasis.
- ✓ You can **never** separate **haber**, **he**, **ha** and so on from the following past participle (the **-ado/-ido** form of regular verbs).

✓ Adverbs generally come just before an adjective or another adverb.

PREPOSITIONS

What is a preposition?

A **preposition** is a word such as *at, for, with, into* or *from*, which is usually followed by a noun, pronoun or, in English, a word ending in *-ing*. Prepositions show how people and things relate to the rest of the sentence, for example, *She's at home.*; *a tool for cutting grass*; *It's from David*.

Using prepositions

- Prepositions are used in front of nouns and pronouns (such as *people, the man, me, him* and so on), and show the relationship between the noun or pronoun and the rest of the sentence. Although prepositions can be used before verb forms ending in *-ing* in English, in Spanish, they're followed by the infinitive – the form of the verb ending in **-ar**, **-er**, or **-ir**.

Le enseñé el billete a la revisora. I showed my ticket to the ticket inspector.

Ven con nosotros. Come with us.

Sirve para limpiar zapatos. It's for cleaning shoes.

⇒ For more information on **Nouns, Pronouns and Infinitives**, see pages 1, 41 and 144.

- Prepositions are also used after certain adjectives and verbs and link them to the rest of the sentence.

Estoy muy contento con tu trabajo. I'm very happy with your work.

Estamos hartos de repetirlo. We're fed up with repeating it.

¿Te gusta jugar al fútbol? Do you like playing football?

- As in English, Spanish prepositions can be made up of several words instead of just one.

delante de in front of

antes de before

- In English, we can end a sentence with a preposition such as *for*, *with* or *into*, even though some people think this is not good grammar. You can NEVER end a Spanish sentence with a preposition.

¿Para qué es? What's it for?

la chica con la que hablaste the girl you spoke to

Tip

The choice of preposition in Spanish is not always what we might expect, coming from English. It is often difficult to give just one English equivalent for a particular Spanish preposition, since prepositions are

used so differently in the two languages. This means that you need to learn how they are used and look up set phrases involving prepositions (such as *to be fond of somebody* or *dressed in white*) in a dictionary in order to find an equivalent expression in Spanish.

a, de, en, para and por

1 a

Tip

When **a** is followed by **el**, the two words merge to become **al**.

- **a** can mean *to* with places and destinations.

Voy **a** Madrid.

I'm going to Madrid.

Voy **al** cine.

I'm going to the cinema.

Tip

de is also used with **a** to mean *from ... to ...*

de la mañana a la noche from morning to night

de 10 a 12 from 10 to 12

- **a** can mean *to* with indirect objects.

Se lo dio a María.

He gave it to María.

- **a** can mean *to* after **ir** when talking about what someone is *going to* do.

Voy a verlo mañana.

I'm going to see him tomorrow.

- **a** can mean *at* with times.

a las cinco

at five o'clock

a las dos y cuarto

at quarter past two

a medianoche

at midnight

- **a** can mean *at* with prices and rates.

a dos euros el kilo

(at) two euros a kilo

a 100 km por hora

at 100 km per hour

- **a** can mean *at* with ages.

a los 18 años

at (the age of) 18

- **a** can mean *at* with places, but generally only after verbs suggesting movement.

Te voy a buscar a la estación.

I'll meet you at the station.

cuando llegó al aeropuerto

when he arrived at the airport

Tip

You can't use **a** to mean *at* when talking about a building, area, or village where someone is. Use **en** instead.

Está **en** casa.

He's at home.

- **a** can mean *onto*.

Se cayó **a** suelo.

He fell onto the floor.

- **a** can mean *into*.

pegar una foto **a** álbum to stick a photo into the album

- **a** is also used to talk about distance.

a 8 km de aquí (at a distance of) 8 km from here

- **a** is also used after certain adjectives and verbs.

parecido **a** esto

similar to this

- **a** can mean *from* after certain verbs.

Se lo compré **a** mi hermano. I bought it from my brother.

Les robaba dinero **a** sus compañeros de clase. He was stealing money from his classmates.

⇒ For more information on *Prepositions after verbs*, see page 150.

► **a** is used in set phrases.

<u>a</u> final/finales/fines de mes	at the end of the month
<u>a</u> veces	at times
<u>a</u> menudo	often
<u>a</u> la puerta	at the door
<u>a</u> mano	by hand
<u>a</u> caballo	on horseback
<u>a</u> pie	on foot
<u>a</u> tiempo	on time
<u>al</u> sol	in the sun
<u>a</u> la sombra	in the shade

Grammar Extra!

a is often used to talk about the manner in which something is done.

<u>a</u> la inglesa	in the English manner
<u>a</u> paso lento	slowly
poco <u>a</u> poco	little by little

The Spanish equivalent of the English construction *on* with a verb ending in *-ing* is **al** followed by the infinitive.

<u>al</u> levantarse	on getting up
-----------------------------	---------------

al abrir la puerta

on opening the door

2 Personal a

- When the direct object of a verb is a specific person or pet animal, **a** is placed immediately before it.

Querían mucho a sus hijos. They loved their children
dearly.

**Cuido a mi hermana
pequeña.** I look after my little sister.

- 📌 Note that personal **a** is not used after the verb **tener**.

Tienen dos hijos. They have two children.

- ⇒ For more information on **Direct objects**, see page 46.

3 de

Tip

When **de** is followed by **el**, the two words merge to become **del**.

- **de** can mean *from*.

Soy de Londres.

I'm from London.

un médico de Valencia

a doctor from Valencia

Tip

de is also used with **a** to mean *from ... to ...*

de la mañana a la noche from morning to night

de 10 a 12 from 10 to 12

► **de** can mean *of*.

el presidente de Francia the president of France

dos litros de leche two litres of milk

► **de** shows who or what something belongs to.

el sombrero de mi padre my father's hat (*literally: the hat of my father*)

la oficina del presidente the president's office (*literally: the office of the president*)

► **de** can indicate what something is made of, what it contains or what it is used for.

un vestido de seda a silk dress

una caja de cerillas a box of matches

una taza de té a cup of tea *or* a teacup

una silla de cocina a kitchen chair

un traje de baño a swimming costume

► **de** is used in comparisons when a number is mentioned.

Había más/menos de 100 personas. There were more/fewer than 100 people.

☑ Note that you do not use **que** with **más** or **menos** when there is a number involved.

► **de** can mean *in* after superlatives (*the most...*, *the biggest*, *the least...*).

la ciudad más/menos contaminada del mundo the most/least polluted city in the world

⇒ For more information on *Superlative adjectives*, see page 26.

► **de** is used after certain adjectives and verbs.

contento de ver pleased to see

Es fácil/difícil de entender. It's easy/difficult to understand.

Es capaz de olvidarlo. He's quite capable of forgetting it.

⇒ For more information on *Prepositions after verbs*, see page 150.

Grammar Extra!

de is often used in descriptions.

la mujer del sombrero verde the woman in the green hat

un chico de ojos azules

a boy with blue eyes

4 en

► **en** can mean *in* with places.

en el campo

in the country

en Londres

in London

en la cama

in bed

con un libro en la mano

with a book in his hand

► **en** can mean *at*.

en casa

at home

en el colegio

at school

en el aeropuerto

at the airport

en la parada de autobús

at the bus stop

en Navidad

at Christmas

► **en** can mean *in* with months, years and seasons and when saying how long something takes or took.

en marzo

in March

en 2005

in 2005

Nació en invierno.

He was born in winter.

Lo hice en dos días.

I did it in two days.

☑ Note the following time phrase which does not use *in* in English.

en este momento

at this moment

Tip

There are two ways of talking about a length of time in Spanish which translate the same in English, but have very different meanings.

Lo haré dentro de una semana. I'll do it in a week.

Lo haré en una semana. I'll do it in a week.

Though both can be translated in the same way, the first sentence means that you'll do it in a week's time; the second means that it will take you a week to do it.

- **en** can mean *in* with languages and in set phrases.

Está escrito en español.

It's written in Spanish.

en voz baja

in a low voice

- **en** can mean *on*.

sentado en una silla

sitting on a chair

en la planta baja

on the ground floor

**Hay dos cuadros en la
pared.**

There are two pictures on the
wall.

- **en** can mean *by* with most methods of transport.

en coche

by car

en avión

by plane

en tren

by train

► **en** can mean *into*.

No entremos en la casa. Let's not go into the house.

Metió la mano en el bolso. She put her hand into her handbag.

► **en** is also used after certain adjectives and verbs.

Es muy buena/mala en geografía. She is very good/bad at geography.

Fueron los primeros/últimos/únicos en llegar. They were the first/last/only ones to arrive.

⇒ For more information on *Prepositions after verbs*, see page 150.

5 para

► **para** can mean *for* with a person, destination or purpose.

Para mí un zumo de naranja. An orange juice for me.

Salen para Cádiz. They are leaving for Cádiz.

¿ Para qué lo quieres? What do you want it for?

☑ Note that you cannot end a sentence in Spanish with a preposition as you can in English.

► **para** can mean *for* with time.

Es **para** mañana.

It's for tomorrow.

una habitación **para** dos noches

a room for two nights

► **para** is also used with an infinitive with the meaning of (*in order*) *to*.

Lo hace **para** ganar dinero.

He does it to earn money.

Lo hice **para** ayudarte.

I did it to help you.

Tip

para mí can be used to mean *in my opinion*.

Para mí, es estupendo.

In my opinion, it's great.

6 **por**

► **por** can mean *for* when it means *for the benefit of* or *because of*.

Lo hice **por** mis padres.

I did it for my parents.

Lo hago **por** ellos.

I'm doing it for them.

por la misma razón

for the same reason

► **por** can mean *for* when it means *in exchange for*.

¿Cuánto me darán **por**
este libro?

How much will they give me for
this book?

Te lo cambio **por** éste. I'll swap you it for this one.

- **por** can mean *by* in passive constructions.

descubierto por unos niños discovered by some children

odiado por sus enemigos hated by his enemies

⇒ For more information on the *Passive*, see page [122](#).

- **por** can mean *by* with means of transport when talking about freight.

por barco by boat

por tren by train

por avión by airmail

por correo aéreo by airmail

- **por** can mean *along*.

Vaya **por** ese camino. Go along that path.

- **por** can mean *through*.

por el túnel through the tunnel

- **por** can mean *around*.

pasear por el campo to walk around the countryside

- **por** is used to talk vaguely about where something or someone is.

Tiene que estar **por** aquí. It's got to be around here
somewhere.

Lo busqué **por** todas partes. I looked for him everywhere.

► **por** is used to talk about time.

por la mañana in the morning

por la tarde in the afternoon/evening

por la noche at night

► **por** is used to talk about rates.

90 km **por** hora 90 km an hour

un cinco **por** ciento five per cent

Ganaron **por** 3 a 0. They won by 3 to 0.

► **por** is used in certain phrases which talk about the reason for something.

¿**por** qué? why?, for what reason?

por todo eso because of all that

por lo que he oído judging by what I've heard

► **por** is used to talk about how something is done.

llamar **por** teléfono to telephone

Lo oí **por** la radio. I heard it on the radio.

Grammar Extra!

por is often combined with other Spanish prepositions and words, usually to show movement.

Saltó por encima de la mesa. She jumped over the table.

Nadamos por debajo del puente. We swam under the bridge.

Pasaron por delante de Correos. They went past the post office.

Key points

- ✓ **a, de, en, para** and **por** are very frequently used prepositions which you will need to study carefully.
- ✓ Each of them has several possible meanings, which depend on the context they are used in.

Some other common prepositions

- The following prepositions are also frequently used in Spanish.
 - **antes de** before

antes de las 5

before 5 o'clock

- ☑ Note that, like many other prepositions, **antes de** is used before infinitives in Spanish where in English we'd usually use the *-ing* form of the verb.

Antes de abrir el paquete,
lea las instrucciones.

Before opening the packet,
read the instructions.

- **bajo** below, under

un grado bajo cero

one degree below zero

bajo la cama

under the bed

- ☑ Note that **debajo de** is more common than **bajo** when talking about the actual position of something.

debajo de la cama

under the bed

- **con** with

Vino con su amigo.

She came with her friend.

- ☑ Note that **con** can be used after certain adjectives as well as in a few very common phrases.

enfadado con ellos angry with them

un café con leche a white coffee

un té con limón a (cup of) tea with a slice of lemon

- **contra** against

Estaba apoyado contra la
pared.

He was leaning against the
wall.

El domingo jugamos contra el
Málaga.

We play against Malaga on
Sunday.

- **debajo de** under

debajo de la cama

under the bed

- **delante de** in front of

Iba delante de mí.

He was walking **in front of** me.

- **desde** from, since

Desde aquí se puede ver.

You can see it **from** here.

Llamaron desde España.

They phoned **from** Spain.

desde otro punto de vista

from a different point of view

desde entonces

from then onwards

desde la una hasta las siete **from** one o'clock **to** seven

desde la boda

since the wedding

Tip

Spanish uses the present tense with **desde** (meaning *since*) and the expressions **desde hace** and **hace ... que** (meaning *for*) to talk about actions that started in the past and are still going on.

Estoy aquí desde las diez.

I've been here
since ten
o'clock.

Estoy aquí desde hace dos horas.

I've been here

or Hace dos horas que estoy aquí.

for two hours.

If you are saying how long something has NOT happened for, in European Spanish you can use the perfect tense with **desde** and **desde hace**.

No ha trabajado desde el accidente. He hasn't worked since the accident.

No ha trabajado desde hace dos meses. He hasn't worked for two months.

⇒ For more information on the **Present tense** and the **Perfect tense**, see pages 71 and 115.

- **después de** after

después del partido after the match

☑ Note that, like many other prepositions, **después de** is used before infinitives in Spanish where in English we'd usually use the *-ing* form of the verb.

Después de ver la televisión me fui a la cama. After watching television I went to bed.

- **detrás de** behind

Están detrás de la puerta. They are behind the door.

- **durante** during, for

durante la guerra

during the war

Anduvieron durante 3 días.

They walked for 3 days.

- **entre** between, among

entre 8 y 10

between 8 and 10

Hablaban entre sí. They were talking among themselves.

- **hacia** towards, around

Van hacia ese edificio. They're going towards that building.

hacia las tres

at around three (o'clock)

hacia finales de enero around the end of January

Grammar Extra!

hacia can also combine with some adverbs to show movement in a particular direction.

hacia arriba

upwards

hacia abajo

downwards

hacia adelante

forwards

hacia atrás

backwards

-
- **hasta** until, as far as, to, up to

hasta la noche

until night

Fueron en coche <u>hasta</u> Sevilla.	They drove <u>as far as</u> Seville.
<u>desde</u> la una hasta las tres	<u>from</u> one o'clock <u>to</u> three
<u>Hasta</u> ahora no ha llamado nadie.	No one has called <u>up to</u> now.

☑ Note that there are some very common ways of saying goodbye using **hasta**.

¡<u>Hasta</u> luego!	See you!
¡<u>Hasta</u> mañana!	See you tomorrow!

• **sin** without

<u>sin</u> agua/dinero	<u>without</u> any water/money
<u>sin</u> mi marido	<u>without</u> my husband

Tip

Whereas in English we say *without a doubt*, *without a hat* and so on, in Spanish the indefinite article isn't given after **sin**.

sin duda	without a doubt
sin sombrero	without a hat

⇒ For more information on **Articles**, see page [10](#).

☑ Note that **sin** is used before infinitives in Spanish where in English we would use the *-ing* form of the verb.

Se fue sin decir nada. He left without saying anything.

- **sobre** on, about

sobre la cama on the bed

Ponlo sobre la mesa. Put it on the table.

un libro sobre Shakespeare a book on or about
Shakespeare

Madrid tiene sobre 4 millones Madrid has about 4 million
de habitantes. inhabitants.

Vendré sobre las cuatro. I'll come about four o'clock.

► Spanish prepositions can be made up of more than one word, for example, **antes de**, **detrás de**. Here are some more common prepositions made up of two or more words:

- **a causa de** because of

No salimos a causa de la We didn't go out because of the
lluvia. rain.

- **al lado de** beside, next to

al lado de la tele beside the TV

- **cerca de** near, close to

Está cerca de la iglesia. It's near the church.

- **encima de** on, on top of

Ponlo encima de la mesa. Put it on the table.

- **por encima de** above, over

Saltó por encima de la mesa. He jumped over the table.

- **en medio de** in the middle of

Está en medio de la plaza. It's in the middle of the square.

- **junto a** by

Está junto al cine. It's by the cinema.

- **junto con** together with

Fue detenido junto con su hijo. He was arrested together with his son.

- **lejos de** far from

No está lejos de aquí. It isn't far from here.

CONJUNCTIONS

What is a conjunction?

A **conjunction** is a word such as *and, but, or, so, if* and *because*, that links two words or phrases of a similar type, or two parts of a sentence, for example, *Diane and I have been friends for years.*; *I left because I was bored.*

y, o, pero, porque and si

- **y, o, pero, porque** and **si** are the most common conjunctions that you need to know in Spanish:

- **y** and

el coche y la casa the car and the house

- ☑ Note that you use **e** instead of **y** before words beginning with **i** or **hi** (but not **hie**).

Diana e Isabel Diana and Isabel

madre e hija mother and daughter

BUT

árbolesy hierba trees and grass

- **o** or

patatas fritas o arroz

chips or rice

- ☑ Note that you use **u** instead of **o** before words beginning with **o** or **ho**.

diez u once

ten or eleven

minutosu horas

minutes or hours

- ☑ Note that you use **ó** instead of **o** between numerals to avoid confusion with zero.

37 **ó** 38

37 or 38

⇒ *For more information on **Numbers**, see page [206](#).*

- **pero** but

Me gustaría ir, pero estoy muy cansado. I'd like to go, but I am very tired.

- ☑ Note that you use **sino** in direct contrasts after a negative.

No es escocesa, sino irlandesa. She's not Scottish but Irish.

- **porque** because

Ha llamado porque necesita un libro. He called because he needs a book.

- ☑ Note that you don't use **porque** at the beginning of a sentence; you should use **como** instead.

Como está lloviendo no podemos salir.

Because or As it's raining, we can't go out.

Tip

Be careful not to mix up **porque** (meaning *because*) and **por qué** (meaning *why*).

- **que** that

Dice **que** me quiere. He says that he loves me.

Dicen **que** te han visto. They say that they've seen you.

Sabe **que** estamos aquí. He knows that we are here.

⇒ For more information on **que** followed by the subjunctive and **que** (meaning *than*) in comparisons, see pages [136](#) and [26](#).

Tip

In English we can say both *He says he loves me* and *He says that he loves me*, or *She knows you're here* and *She knows that you're here*. You can NEVER leave out **que** in Spanish in the way that you can leave out *that* in English.

- **si** if, whether

Si no estudias, no aprobarás. If you don't study, you won't pass.

¿Sabes si nos han pagado ya? Do you know if or whether we've been paid yet?

Avisadme si no podéis venir. Let me know if you can't come.

⇒ For information on **si** followed by the subjunctive, see page **143**.

Tip

There is no accent on **si** when it means *if*. Be careful not to confuse **si** (meaning *if*) with **sí** (meaning *yes* or *himself/herself/yourself/ themselves/yourselves*).

Some other common conjunctions

► Here are some other common Spanish conjunctions:

- **como** as

Como es domingo, puedes quedarte en la cama. As it's Sunday, you can stay in bed.

- **cuando** when

Cuando entré estaba leyendo. She was reading when I came in.

⇒ For information on **cuando** followed by the subjunctive, see page 140.

- **pues** then, well

Tengo sueño. – ¡Pues, vete a la cama! I'm tired. – Then go to bed!

Pues, no lo sabía. Well, I didn't know.

Pues, como te iba contando ... Well, as I was saying ...

- **mientras** while (*referring to time*)

Lava tú mientras yo seco. You wash while I dry.

Él leía mientras yo cocinaba. He would read while I cooked.

⇒ For information on **mientras** followed by the subjunctive, see page 140.

- **mientras que** whereas

Isabel es muy dinámicamientras que Ana es más tranquila. Isabel is very dynamic whereas Ana is more laid-back.

- **aunque** although, even though

Me gusta el francés, aunque prefiero el alemán. I like French although I prefer German.

Seguí andando aunque me I went on walking even

dolía mucho la pierna.

though my leg hurt a lot.

Grammar Extra!

aunque is also used to mean *even if*. In this case, it is followed by the subjunctive.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page [134](#).

Split conjunctions

In English, we have conjunctions which are made up of two parts (*both ... and, neither ... nor*). Spanish also has conjunctions which have more than one part, the commonest of which are probably **ni ... ni** (meaning *neither ... nor*) and **o ... o** (meaning *either ... or*):

- **ni ... ni** neither ... nor

Ni Carlos **ni** Sofía vinieron.

or

No vinieron **ni** Carlos **ni** Sofía.

Neither Carlos nor Sofía

came.

☑ Note that if you're putting **ni ... ni** after the verb you must put **no** before the verb.

No tengo **ni** hermanos **ni** hermanas.

I have neither brothers nor sisters.

- **o ... o** either ... or

Puedes tomar o helado o You can have either ice cream or yoghurt.

Key points

- ✓ **y, o, pero, porque** and **si** are the most common conjunctions that you need to know in Spanish.
- ✓ Use **e** rather than **y** before words beginning with **i** or **hi** (but not with **hie**).
- ✓ Use **u** rather than **o** before words beginning with **o** or **ho**.
- ✓ **que** very often means *that*. *That* is often missed out in English, but **que** can never be left out in Spanish.
- ✓ Some conjunctions such as **ni ... ni** and **o ... o** consist of two parts.

SPELLING

1 Sounds that are spelled differently depending on the letter that follows

- Certain sounds are spelled differently in Spanish depending on what letter follows them. For example, the hard [k] sound heard in the English word *car* is usually spelled:
 - **c** before **a**, **o** and **u**
 - **qu** before **e** and **i**
- This means that the Spanish word for *singer* is spelled **cantante** (pronounced [kan-tan-tay]); the word for *coast* is spelled **costa** (pronounced [ko-sta]); and the word for *cure* is spelled **cura** (pronounced [koo-ra]).
- However, the Spanish word for cheese is spelled **queso** (pronounced [kay-so]) and the word for *chemistry* is spelled **química** (pronounced [kee-mee-ka]).
- ☑ Note that although the letter **k** is not much used in Spanish, it is found in words relating to *kilos*, *kilometres* and *kilograms*; for example **un kilo** (meaning *a kilo*); **un kilogramo** (meaning *a kilogram*); **un kilómetro** (meaning *a kilometre*).
- Similarly, the [g] sound heard in the English word *gone* is spelled:
 - **g** before **a**, **o** and **u**
 - **gu** before **e** and **i**

- This means that the Spanish word for *cat* is spelled **gato** (pronounced [ga-toh]); the word for *goal* is spelled **gol** (pronounced [gol]); and the word for *worm* is spelled **gusano** (pronounced [goo-sa-no]).
 - However, the Spanish word for *war* is spelled **guerra** (pronounced [gair-ra]) and the word for *guitar* is spelled **guitarra** (pronounced [ghee-tar-ra]).
- ⇒ For more information on pronunciation, see *The Alphabet*, on page 92 of the Verb Index.

2 Letters that are pronounced differently depending on what follows

- Certain letters are pronounced differently depending on what follows them. As we have seen, when **c** comes before **a**, **o** or **u**, it is pronounced like a [k]. When it comes before **e** or **i**, in European Spanish it is pronounced like the [th] in the English word *pith* and in Latin American Spanish it is pronounced like the [s] in *sing*.
- This means that **casa** (meaning *house*) is pronounced [ka-sa], but **centro** (meaning *centre*) is pronounced [then-tro] in European Spanish and [sen-tro] in Latin American Spanish. Similarly, **cita** (meaning *date*) is pronounced [thee-ta] in European Spanish and [see-ta] in Latin American Spanish.
- In the same way, when **g** comes before **a**, **o** or **u**, it is pronounced like the [g] in *gone*. When it comes before **e** or **i**, however, it is pronounced like the [ch] in *loch*, as it is pronounced in Scotland.
- This means that **gas** (meaning *gas*) is pronounced [gas] but **gente** (meaning *people*) is pronounced [chen-tay]. Similarly, **gimnasio** (meaning *gym*) is pronounced [cheem-na-see-o].

3 Spelling changes that are needed in verbs to reflect the pronunciation

- ▶ Because **c** sounds like [k] before **a**, **o** and **u**, and like [th] or [s] before **e** and **i**, you sometimes have to alter the spelling of a verb when adding a particular ending to ensure the word reads as it is pronounced:
 - In verbs ending in **-car** (which is pronounced [kar]), you have to change the **c** to **qu** before endings starting with an **e** to keep the hard [k] pronunciation. So the **yo** form of the preterite tense of **sacar** (meaning *to take out*) is spelled **saqué**. This spelling change affects the preterite and the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-car**.
 - In verbs ending in **-cer** and **-cir** (which are pronounced [ther] and [thir] or [ser] and [sir]), you have to change the **c** to **z** before endings starting with **a** or **o** to keep the soft [th/s] pronunciation. So while the **yo** form of the preterite tense of **hacer** is spelled **hice**, the **él/ella/usted** form is spelled **hizo**. This spelling change affects the ordinary present tense as well as the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-cer** or **-cir**.
- ▶ Because **g** sounds like the [g] of *gone* before **a**, **o** and **u**, and like the [ch] of *loch* before **e** and **i**, you also sometimes have to alter the spelling of a verb when adding a particular ending to ensure the verb still reads as it is pronounced:
 - In verbs ending in **-gar** (which is pronounced [gar]), you have to change the **g** to **gu** before endings starting with an **e** or an **i** to keep the hard [g] pronunciation. So the **yo** form of the preterite tense of **pagar** (meaning *to pay*) is spelled **pagué**. This spelling change affects the preterite and the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-gar**.
 - In verbs ending in **-ger** and **-gir** (which are pronounced [cher] and [chir]), you have to change the **g** to **j** before endings starting with **a** or **o** to keep the soft [ch] pronunciation. So while the **él/ella/usted** form of the present tense of **coger**

(meaning *to take* or *to catch*) is spelled **coge**, the **yo** form is spelled **cojo**. This spelling change affects the ordinary present tense as well as the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-ger** or **-gir**.

- Because **gui** sounds like [ghee] in verbs ending in **-guir**, but **gua** and **guo** sound like [gwa] and [gwo], you have to drop the **u** before **a** and **o** in verbs ending in **-guir**. So while the **él/ella/usted** form of the present tense of **seguir** (meaning *to follow*) is spelled **sigue**, the **yo** form is spelled **sigo**. This spelling change affects the ordinary present tense as well as the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-guir**.
- Finally, although **z** is always pronounced [th] in European Spanish and [s] in Latin American Spanish, in verbs ending in **-zar** the **z** spelling is changed to **c** before **e**. So, while the **él/ella/usted** form of the preterite tense of **cruzar** is spelled **cruzó**, the **yo** form is spelled **crucé**. This spelling change affects the preterite and the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-zar**.

4 Spelling changes that are needed when making nouns and adjectives plural

- In the same way that you have to make some spelling changes when modifying the endings of certain verbs, you sometimes have to change the spelling of nouns and adjectives when making them plural.
- This affects nouns and adjectives ending in **-z**. When adding the **-es** ending of the plural, you have to change the **z** to **c**.

una vez once, one time → **dos veces** twice, two times

una luz a light → **unas luces** some lights

capaz capable (*singular*) → **capaces** capable (*plural*)

- The following table shows the usual spelling of the various sounds discussed above:

	Usual spelling				
	before a	before o	before u	before e	before i
[k] sound (as in <i>cap</i>)	ca: casa house	co: cosa thing	cu: cubo bucket	que: queso cheese	qui: química chemistry
[g] sound (as in <i>gap</i>)	ga: gato cat	go: gordo fat	gu: gusto taste	gue: guerra war	gui: guitarra guitar
[th] sound (as in <i>pith</i>) (pronounced [s] in Latin America)	za: zapato shoe	zo: zorro fox	zu: zumo juice	ce: cero zero	ci: cinta ribbon
[ch] sound (as in <i>loch</i>)	ja: jardín garden	jo: joven young	ju: jugar to play	ge: gente people	gi: gigante giant

- ☑ Note that because **j** is still pronounced [ch] even when it comes before **e** or **i**, there are quite a number of words that contain **je** or **ji**; for example,

el jefe/la jefa	the boss
el jerez	sherry
el jersey	jersey
el jinete	jockey
la jirafa	giraffe
el ejemplo	the example
dije/dijiste	I said/you said
dejé	I left

Similarly, because **z** is also pronounced [th] or [s] even when it comes before **i** or **e**, there are one or two exceptions to the spelling rules described above; for example, **el zigzag** (meaning *zigzag*) and **la zeta** (the name of the letter **z** in Spanish).

STRESS

Which syllable to stress

- Most words can be broken up into syllables. These are the different sounds that words are broken up into. They are shown in this section by | and the stressed syllable is underlined.
- There are some very simple rules to help you remember which part of the word to stress in Spanish, and when to write an accent.
- Words don't have a written acute accent if they follow the normal stress rules for Spanish. If they do not follow the normal stress rules, they do need an accent.

Tip

The accent that shows stress is always an acute accent in Spanish (´). To remember which way an acute accents slopes try thinking of this saying:

It's low on the left, with the height on the right.

1 Words ending in a vowel or -n or -s

- Words ending in a vowel (a, e, i, o or u) or -n or -s are normally stressed on the last syllable but one. If this is the case, they do not have any written accents.

<u>ca</u> sa	house	<u>ca</u> sas	houses
pa <u>la</u> bra	word	pa <u>la</u> bras	words
<u>tar</u> de	afternoon	<u>tar</u> des	afternoons
<u>ha</u> bla	he/she speaks	<u>ha</u> blan	they speak
<u>co</u> rre	he/she runs	<u>co</u> rren	they run

- Whenever words ending in a vowel or **-n** or **-s** are not stressed on the last syllable but one, they have a written accent on the vowel that is stressed.

<u>úl</u> ti mo	last
<u>jó</u> ve nes	young people
<u>crí</u> me nes	crimes

2 Words ending in a consonant other than -n or -s

- Words ending in a consonant (a letter that isn't a vowel) other than **-n** or **-s** are normally stressed on the last syllable. If this is the case, they do not have an accent.

<u>re</u> loj	clock, watch
ver <u>dad</u>	truth
trac <u>tor</u>	tractor

- Whenever words ending in a consonant other than **-n** or **-s** are not stressed on the last syllable, they have an accent.

ca <u>rác</u> ter	character
di <u>fí</u> cil	difficult

fá|cil

easy

3 Accents on feminine and plural forms

- ▶ The same syllable is stressed in the plural form of adjectives and nouns as in the singular. To show this, you need to:
 - add an accent in the plural in the case of unaccented nouns and adjectives of more than one syllable ending in **-n**

or|den

order

ór|de|nes

orders

e|xa|men

exam

e|xá|me|nes

exams

BUT: tren

train

tre|nes

trains

- ☑ Note that in the case of one-syllable words ending in **-n** or **-s**, such as **tren** above, no accent is needed in the plural, since the stress falls naturally on the last syllable but one thanks to the plural **-es** ending.

- drop the accent in the plural form of nouns and adjectives ending in **-n** or **-s** which have an accent on the last syllable in the singular

au|to|bús

bus

au|to|bu|ses

buses

re|vo|lu|ción

revolution

re|vo|lu|cio|nes

revolutions

- ▶ The feminine forms of nouns or adjectives whose masculine form ends in an accented vowel followed by **-n** or **-s** do not have an accent.

un francés

a Frenchman

una francesa

a French woman

Tip

Just because a word has a written accent in the singular does not necessarily mean it has one in the plural, and vice versa.

jo|ven

*Ends in **n**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; follows rule, so no accent needed in singular*

jó|ve|nes

*Ends in **s**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; breaks rule, so is needed in plural to keep stress on **jo-***

lec|ción

*Ends in **n**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; breaks rule, so is needed in singular*

lec|cio|nes

*Ends in **s**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; follows rule, so no accent needed in plural to keep stress on **-cio-***

4 Which vowel to stress in vowel combinations

- The vowels **i** and **u** are considered to be weak. The vowels **a**, **e** and **o** are considered to be strong.
- When a weak vowel (**i** or **u**) combines with a strong one (**a**, **e** or **o**), they form one sound that is part of the same syllable. Technically speaking, this is called a diphthong. The strong vowel is emphasized more.

ba i le	dance
ci e rra	he/she/it closes
bo i na	beret
pe i ne	comb
ca u sa	cause

Tip

To remember which are the weak vowels, try thinking of this saying: *U and I are weaklings and always lose out to other vowels!*

- When **i** is combined with **u** or **u** with **i** (the two weak vowels), they also form one sound within the same syllable; there is more emphasis on the second vowel.

ci udad	city, town
fui	I went

- When you combine two strong vowels (**a**, **e** or **o**), they form two separate sounds and are part of different syllables.

ca er	to fall
ca os	chaos
fe o	ugly

5 Adding accents to some verb forms

► When object pronouns are added to the end of certain verb forms, an accent is often required to show that the syllable stressed in the verb form does not change. These verb forms are:

- the gerund whenever one or more pronouns are added

comprando buying

comprando(se)lo buying it (for him/her/them)

- the infinitive, when followed by two pronouns

vender to sell

vendérselas to sell them to him/her/them

- imperative forms

compra buy

cómpralo buy it

hagan do

háganselo do it for him/her/them

BUT:

comprad buy

compradlo buy it

⇒ For more information on **Gerunds, Infinitives and the Imperative**, see pages [125](#), [144](#) and [85](#).

6 Accents on adjectives and adverbs

► Adjectives ending in **-ísimo** always have an accent on **-ísimo**. This means that any other accents are dropped.

caro → **carísimo**
expensive → very expensive

difícil → **difícilísimo**
difficult → very difficult

- Accents on adjectives are not affected when you add **-mente** to turn them into adverbs.

fácil → **fácilmente**
easy → easily

The acute accent used to show meaning

- The acute accent is often used to distinguish between the written forms of some words which are pronounced the same but have a different meaning or function.

Without an accent		With an accent	
mi	my	mí	me
tu	your	tú	you
te	you	té	tea
si	if	sí	yes; himself
el	the	él	he
de	of	dé	give
solo	alone; by oneself; only	sólo	only
mas	but	más	more

Han robado <u>mi</u> coche.	They've stolen my car.
A <u>mí</u> no me vio.	He didn't see me.
¿Te gusta <u>tu</u> trabajo?	Do you like your job?
<u>Tú</u> , ¿qué opinas?	What do you think?
... <u>si</u> no viene	...if he doesn't come
<u>Sí</u> que lo sabe.	Yes, he does know.
<u>El</u> puerto está cerca.	The harbour's nearby.
<u>Él</u> lo hará.	He'll do it.

☑ Note that nowadays the accent is only used on **sólo** in the sense of only where the sentence might otherwise be ambiguous.

Me bebí una cerveza <u>sólo</u> .	I only had one beer.
Me bebí una cerveza <u>solo</u> .	I had a beer on my own.

► The acute accent is sometimes used on the demonstrative pronouns (**éste/ésta**, **aquél/aquélla**, **ése/ésa** and so on) to distinguish them from the demonstrative adjectives (**este/esta**, **aque/aquella**, **ese/esa** and so on).

Me gusta <u>esta</u> casa. (= <i>adjective</i>)	I like this house.
Me quedo con <u>ésta</u> . (= <i>pronoun</i>)	I'll take this one.
¿Ves <u>aquellos</u> edificios? (= <i>adjective</i>)	Can you see those buildings?
<u>Aquellos</u> son más bonitos. (= <i>pronoun</i>)	Those are prettier.

☑ Note that no accent is given on the neuter pronouns **esto**, **eso** and **aquello** since there is no adjective form with which they might be confused.

⇒ For more information on *Demonstrative adjectives* and *Demonstrative pronouns*, see pages [30](#) and [67](#).

► An accent is needed on question words in direct and indirect questions as well as after expressions of uncertainty.

¿Cómo estás?

How are you?

Dime cómo estás.

Tell me how you are.

Me preguntó cómo estaba.

He asked me how I was.

¿Con quién viajaste?

Who did you travel with?

¿Dónde encontraste eso?

Where did you find that?

No sé dónde está.

I don't know where it is.

⇒ For more information on *Questions*, see page [160](#).

► An accent is also needed on exclamation words.

¡Qué asco!

How revolting!

¡Qué horror!

How awful!

¡Qué raro!

How strange!

¡Cuánta gente!

What a lot of people!

Key points

- ✓ When deciding whether or not to write an accent on a word, think about how it sounds and what letter it ends in, as there are certain rules to say when an accent should be used.
- ✓ The vowels **i** and **u** are considered to be weak. The vowels **a**, **e** and **o** are considered to be strong. They can combine in a number of ways.
- ✓ Accents are added to written forms of words which are pronounced the same but have a different meaning, for example, **mi/mí**, **tu/tú** and so on.
- ✓ Accents are also added to most demonstrative pronouns so that they are not confused with demonstrative adjectives.
- ✓ Adjectives ending in **-ísimo** always have an accent on **-ísimo**, but no accent is added when adverbs are formed by adding **-mente** to adjectives.
- ✓ Question words used in direct and indirect questions as well as exclamation words always have an acute accent.

NUMBERS

1	uno (un, una)
2	dos
3	tres
4	cuatro
5	cinco
6	seis
7	siete
8	ocho
9	nueve
10	diez
11	once
12	doce
13	trece
14	catorce
15	quince
16	dieciséis
17	diecisiete
18	dieciocho
19	diecinueve

20	veinte
21	veintiuno (veintiún, veintiuna)
22	veintidós
23	veintitrés
24	veinticuatro
25	veinticinco
26	veintiséis
27	veintisiete
28	veintiocho
29	veintinueve
30	treinta
31	treinta y uno (un, una)
40	cuarenta
41	cuarenta y uno (un, una)
50	cincuenta
52	cincuenta y dos
60	sesenta
65	sesenta y cinco
70	setenta
76	setenta y seis
80	ochenta
87	ochenta y siete
90	noventa

99	noventa y nueve
100	cien (ciento)
101	ciento uno (un, una)
200	doscientos/doscientas
212	doscientos/doscientas doce
300	trescientos/trescientas
400	cuatrocientos/cuatrocientas
500	quinientos/quinientas
600	seiscientos/seiscientas
700	setecientos/setecientas
800	ochocientos/ochocientas
900	novcientos/novecientas
1000	mil
1001	mil (y) uno (un, una)
2000	dos mil
2500	dos mil quinientos/quinientas
1.000.000	un millón <i>(in English: 1,000,000)</i>

Ejemplos

**Vive en el número diez.
en la página diecinueve
un diez por ciento**

Examples

He lives at number ten.
on page nineteen
10%

un cien por cien(to)

100%

1 uno, un or una?

- Use **uno** when counting, unless referring to something or someone feminine.
- Use **un** before a masculine noun and **una** before a feminine noun even when the nouns are plural.

un hombre

one man

una mujer

one woman

treinta y un días

thirty-one days

treinta y una noches

thirty-one nights

veintiún años

twenty-one years

veintiuna chicas

twenty-one girls

2 cien or ciento?

- Use **cien** before both masculine and feminine nouns as well as before **mil** (meaning *thousand*) and **millones** (meaning *million* in the plural):

cien libros

one hundred books

cien mil hombres

one hundred thousand men

cien millones

one hundred million

- Use **ciento** before other numbers.

ciento un perros

one hundred and one dogs

ciento una ovejas one hundred and one sheep

ciento cincuenta one hundred and fifty

☑ Note that you don't translate the *and* in 101, 220 and so on.

- Make **doscientos/doscientas**, **trescientos/trescientas**, **quinientos/quinientas** and so on agree with the noun in question.

doscientas veinte libras two hundred and twenty pounds

quinientos alumnos five hundred students

☑ Note that **setecientos** and **setecientas** have no **i** after the first **s**. Similarly, **novcientos** and **novcientas** have an **o** rather than the **ue** you might expect.

3 **Full stop or comma?**

- Use a full stop, not a comma, to separate thousands and millions in figures.

700.000 (setecientos mil) 700,000 (seven hundred thousand)

5.000.000 (cinco millones) 5,000,000 (five million)

- Use a comma instead of a decimal point to show decimals in Spanish.

0,5 (cero coma cinco) 0.5 (nought point five)

3,4 (tres coma cuatro) 3.4 (three point four)

1st	primero (1^o), primer (1^{er}), primera (1^a)
2nd	segundo (2^o), segunda (2^a)
3rd	tercero (3^o), tercer (3^{er}), tercera (3^a)
4th	cuarto (4^o), cuarta (4^a)
5th	quinto (5^o), quinta (5^a)
6th	sexto (6^o), sexta (6^a)
7th	séptimo (7^o), séptima (7^a)
8th	octavo (8^o), octava (8^a)
9th	noveno (9^o), novena (9^a)
10th	décimo (10^o), décima (10^a)
100th	centésimo (100^o), centésima (100^a)
101st	centésimo primero (101^o), centésima primera (101^a)
1000th	milésimo (1000^o), milésima (1000^a)

Ejemplos

Vive en el quinto (piso).

Llegó tercero.

Examples

He lives on the fifth floor.

He came in third.

Tip

Shorten **primero** (meaning *first*) to **primer**, and **tercero** (meaning *third*) to **tercer** before a masculine singular noun.

su **primer cumpleaños**

his first birthday

el tercer premio

the third prize

- 7 Note that when you are writing these numbers in figures, don't write *1st*, *2nd*, *3rd* as in English. Use **1^o**, **1^a**, **1^{er}**, **2^o**, **2^a** and **3^o**, **3^a**, **3^{er}** as required by the noun.

la 2^a lección

the 2nd lesson

el 3^{er} premio

the 3rd prize

4 primero, segundo, tercero or uno, dos, tres?

- Apart from **primero** (meaning *first*) up to **décimo** (meaning *tenth*), as well as **centésimo** (meaning *one hundredth*) and **milésimo** (meaning *one thousandth*), the ordinal numbers tend not to be used very much in Spanish. Cardinal numbers (ordinary numbers) are used instead.

Carlos tercero

Carlos the third

Alfonso trece

Alfonso the thirteenth

⇒ For numbers used in dates, see page 210.

LA HORA

¿Qué hora es?

Es la una menos veinte.

Es la una menos cuarto.

Es la una.

Es la una y diez.

Es la una y cuarto.

Es la una y media.

Son las dos menos veinticinco.

Son las dos menos cuarto.

Son las dos.

Son las dos y diez.

Son las dos y cuarto.

Son las dos y media.

Son las tres.

THE TIME

What time is it?

It's twenty to one.

It's (a) quarter to one.

It's one o'clock.

It's ten past one.

It's (a) quarter past one.

It's half past one.

It's twenty-five to two.

It's (a) quarter to two.

It's two o'clock.

It's ten past two.

It's (a) quarter past two.

It's half past two.

It's three o'clock.

Tip

Use **son las** for all times not involving **una** (meaning *one*).

¿A qué hora?

At what time?

a medianoche

at midnight

a mediodía	at midday
a la una (del mediodía)	at one o'clock (in the afternoon)
a las ocho (de la tarde)	at eight o'clock (in the evening)
a las 9:25 or a las nueve (y) veinticinco	at nine twenty-five
a las 16:50 or a las dieciséis (y) cincuenta	at 16:50 or sixteen fifty

Note **that** in Spanish, as in English, you can also tell the time using the figures you see on a digital clock or watch or on a 24-hour timetable.

LA FECHA

Los días de la semana

lunes

martes

miércoles

jueves

viernes

sábado

domingo

THE DATE

The days of the week

Monday

Tuesday

Wednesday

Thursday

Friday

Saturday

Sunday

¿Cuándo?

When?

el lunes	on Monday
los lunes	on Mondays
todos los lunes	every Monday
el martes pasado	last Tuesday
el viernes que viene	next Friday
el sábado que viene no, el otro	a week on Saturday
dentro de tres sábados	two weeks on Saturday

Note that days of the week DON'T have a capital letter in Spanish.

Los meses

Months of the year

enero	January
febrero	February
marzo	March
abril	April
mayo	May
junio	June
julio	July
agosto	August
septiembre	September
octubre	October
noviembre	November
diciembre	December

¿Cuándo?

en febrero

el 1 *or* uno de diciembre

en 1998 (mil novecientos
noventa y ocho)

el 15 de diciembre de 2003

el año dos mil

dos mil cinco

When?

in February

on December 1st *or* first
December

in 1998 (nineteen ninety-
eight)

on 15th December, 2003

(the year) two thousand

two thousand and five

¿Qué día es hoy?

Es...

lunes 26 de febrero

domingo 1 de octubre

lunes veintiséis de
febrero

domingo uno de
octubre

What day is it today?

It's...

Monday, 26th February

Sunday, 1st October

Monday, the twenty-sixth of
February

Sunday, the first of October

Note **that** months of the year DON'T have a capital letter in Spanish.

Tip

Although in English we use *first, second, third* and so on in dates, in Spanish you use the equivalent of *one, two, three* and so on.

el dos de mayo

the second of May

FRASES ÚTILES

¿Cuándo?

hoy

today

esta mañana

this morning

esta tarde

this afternoon

esta noche

this evening

¿Con qué frecuencia?

How often?

todos los días

every day

cada dos días

every other day

una vez por semana

once a week

dos veces por semana

twice a week

una vez al mes

once a month

¿Cuándo pasó?

When did it happen?

por la mañana

in the morning

por la noche

in the evening

ayer	yesterday
ayer por la mañana	yesterday morning
ayer por la tarde	yesterday afternoon/evening
ayer por la noche	yesterday evening/last night
anoche	last night
anteayer	the day before yesterday
hace una semana	a week ago
hace quince días	two weeks ago
la semana pasada	last week
el año pasado	last year

¿Cuándo va a pasar?

When is it going to happen?

mañana	tomorrow
mañana por la mañana	tomorrow morning
mañana por la tarde	tomorrow afternoon/evening
mañana por la noche	tomorrow evening/night
pasado mañana	the day after tomorrow
dentro de dos días	in two days' time
dentro de una semana	in a week's time
dentro de quince días	in two weeks' time
el mes que viene	next month
el año que viene	next year

MAIN INDEX

a	15, 145, 147, 148, 149, 150, 180-182
<i>a</i>	10, 15, 16
a + el	12, 57, 180
a causa de	191
a lo mejor	17
a: personal	50, 182
abstract nouns	12
acabar de	148, 149
accents	200-205
active	122, 124
acute accent	200
adjectives	19-40, 168
adjectives:	
agreement	19,20, 21, 22, 23
adjectives:	
comparative and superlative	19, 26, 27
adjectives: demonstrative	24, 30, 31, 204
adjectives:	

endings	19, 20, 21, 22, 23
adjectives:	
feminine	19, 20, 21, 22, 23
adjectives: indefinite	24, 39
adjectives:	
in exclamations	24, 34, 205
adjectives:	
participles used as	81
adjectives: plural	19, 21, 22
adjectives: position	19, 24, 25
adjectives:	
possessive	24, 35-38, 53
adjectives:	
shortened forms	22, 23
adjectives: singular	19, 20, 21
adjectives:	
spelling changes	29, 198
adjectives: used with	
ser or estar	80-83
adjectives: word order	19, 24
adónde	161, 162
adverbs	166-177
adverbs: comparative and	169, 170

superlative	
adverbs: word order	177
<i>after</i>	189
<i>against</i>	188
agreement: of adjectives	19, 20, 21, 22, 23
agreement: of articles	1, 11, 15
agreement: of past	123
participle	
agreement: of possessive	35-38
adjectives	
agreement: of possessive	56-57
pronouns	
al	12, 57, 180
al + infinitive	182
al lado de	191
al que	62, 63
algo	58, 60
alguien	58, 60
algún	22, 23, 39
alguna	39, 58
algunas	39, 58
alguno	22, 23, 58, 60
algunos	39, 58

<i>although</i>	194
alto	167
<i>among</i>	190
<i>an</i>	10, 15
<i>and</i>	192
anoche	171
answers	165
antes	171
antes de	137, 144, 188
antes de que	136
<i>any</i>	15, 39
<i>anybody</i>	58, 59, 60
<i>anything</i>	58, 59, 60
apenas	171
aquel	30, 31, 68
aquél	67, 68
aquella	30, 31, 67, 68
aquélla	67, 68
aquellas	30, 31, 68
aquéllas	67, 68
aquello	67, 68
aquellos	30, 31, 68
aquéllos	67, 68

aquí	171
-ar verbs	72
-ar verbs: conditional	100, 101
-ar verbs: future	97
-ar verbs: gerund	127
-ar verbs: imperative	85, 87
-ar verbs: imperfect	110, 111
-ar verbs: imperfect subjunctive	141
-ar verbs: past participle	115
-ar verbs: perfect	115, 116
-ar verbs: pluperfect	119
-ar verbs: present continuous	84
-ar verbs: present simple	72
-ar verbs: present subjunctive	137
-ar verbs: preterite	104, 105
articles	10-18, 190
<i>as</i>	193, 194
<i>as ... as</i>	28
<i>at</i>	180, 181, 184
aun	172

aún	172
aunque	140, 194
bajo	167, 188
barato	167
bastante	175
bastar	132
<i>be</i>	80
bien	167, 170
buen	22
bueno	22, 27
buscar	50
<i>but</i>	192
<i>by</i>	122, 186
cada	39
cada uno	58
cardinal numbers	206-207
cien	16, 23
ciento	23
cierto	16
claro	167, 172
como	193, 194
cómo	161, 163
comparative adjectives	19, 26, 27, 28

comparative adverbs	169, 170
comparisons	26, 27, 169, 170, 174, 183
compound nouns	8
con	54, 149, 152, 167, 188
con + mí	54
con + sí	54
con + ti	54
conditional	100-103
conditional: irregular verbs	102
conditional: reflexive verbs	103
conjugations	69, 72, 73, 75
conjunctions	192-195, 134, 167
conmigo	54
consigo	54
consonants	201
contigo	54
continuous tenses	82, 84, 125
contra	188
cual	64
cuál	161, 162, 163
cuáles	161, 162, 163
cualquier	23
cualquiera	23, 58

cuando	140, 194
cuándo	161, 162
cuánto	32, 34, 161, 162
cuántos	161
cuyo	64
dates	13, 209-210
days of the week	4, 13, 209, 210
de	27, 145, 148, 149, 151, 182, 183
de + el	12, 182
de manera	167
de quién	163
de quiénes	163
dé	204
deber	146
decir	147
definite article	10, 11-14, 36, 53
definite article: with parts of the body	36
dejar	146, 148
dejar caer	147
del	12, 57, 182
del que	62, 63
demasiado	175

demonstrative adjectives	24, 30, 31, 204
demonstrative pronouns	41, 67, 68, 204
derecho	167
describing words	see adjectives
desde	79, 114, 118, 121, 129, 130, 189
desde hace	118, 189
desde hacía	114, 121
desde...hasta	189
después de	144, 189
<i>did</i>	105
<i>didn't</i>	105
diferente	25
difícil	183
diphthongs	202
direct object	46, 153
direct object pronouns	46, 47, 52
direct questions	164
doing words	see verbs
doler	155
dónde	161, 162
e	192
<i>each</i>	39
<i>each other</i>	96

<i>either ... or</i>	195
el	1, 5, 11, 42, 54, 204
el cual	64
el de	57
el instead of la	11
el mío	56, 57
el nuestro	56, 57
el que	61, 62, 63, 64
el suyo	56, 57
el tuyo	56, 57
el vuestro	56, 57
él	42, 54, 70, 204
ella	42, 54
ellas	42, 44, 54
ellos	42, 44, 54
en	149, 152, 184-185
en cuanto	140
encantar	155
endings: adjectives	19, 20, 21, 22, 23
endings: adverbs	167
endings: nouns	2-7
entre	55, 190
-er verbs: conditional	100, 101

-er verbs: future	97
-er verbs: gerund	127
-er verbs: imperative	86, 87
-er verbs: imperfect	112
-er verbs: imperfect subjunctive	141
-er verbs: past participle	115
-er verbs: perfect	115, 116
-er verbs: pluperfect	119
-er verbs: present continuous	84
-er verbs: present simple	73, 74
-er verbs: present subjunctive	137
-er verbs: preterite	105
esa	30, 31, 68
ésa	67, 68
esas	30, 31
ésas	67
ese	30, 31, 68
ése	67, 68
eso	67, 68
esos	30, 31, 68

éso	67, 68
esperar	50
esta	30, 68
ésta	67, 68
estar	80-83, 84, 125
estas	30, 68
ésta	67, 68
este	30, 68
éste	67, 68
esto	67, 68
estos	68
éstos	67, 68
<i>even if, even though</i>	194
<i>every</i>	39, 40
<i>everybody</i>	58
<i>everything</i>	58
exclamations: adjectives used in	24, 34, 205
exterior	21
fácil	183
faltar	155
feminine adjectives	19, 20, 21, 22, 23
feminine nouns	1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11

<i>few: a few</i>	59
<i>for</i>	185, 186, 189
<i>from</i>	181, 182, 189
<i>from ... to</i>	182, 189
fuerte	168
future tense	97-99
future tense: irregular verbs	98, 99
future tense: reflexive verbs	99
gender	1, 2, 11, 15
gerund	84, 125-128
gerund: accents added to	203
gerund: irregular verbs	127
gerund: used with object	47, 50, 51, 52, 203
pronouns	
<i>going to</i>	97, 180
gran	23
grande	23, 25, 27, 28
gustar	154, 155, 156
gustar más	155
haber	99, 115, 116, 120, 121, 129, 130, 131, 159, 177
había	116, 130
hace ... que	118, 130, 189

hacer	129, 146
hacer falta	130, 136, 144, 155
hacia	190
hacia abajo	190
hacia adelante	190
hacia arriba	190
hacia atrás	190
hacía ... que	114, 121
hasta	55, 189, 190
hasta que	140
hay	116, 130
hay que	131
<i>he</i>	42
<i>her</i>	46, 49, 54
<i>hers</i>	37
<i>herself</i>	54, 91
<i>him</i>	46, 49, 54
<i>himself</i>	54, 91
<i>his</i>	37
<i>how</i>	161, 162
<i>how much/many</i>	32
<i>I</i>	42
<i>if</i>	54, 143, 193, 204

imperative	85-90, 94, 145
imperative: accents added to	203
imperative: irregular verbs	86
imperative: used with direct object pronouns	47, 50, 88, 89 203
imperative: word order	88, 89
imperfect continuous	125
imperfect subjunctive	134, 141, 142, 143
imperfect tense	110-114, 104, 121
imperfect tense: irregular verbs	113
imperfect tense: reflexive verbs	114
impersonal se	96, 124, 133
impersonal verbs	129-133
importar	155
<i>in</i>	183, 184
<i>in order to</i>	185
indefinite adjectives	24, 39
indefinite article	15-16, 190
indefinite pronouns	41, 58
indicative	136, 140, 143

indirect object	49
indirect object pronouns	49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 154
indirect questions	33, 164, 205
inferior	21
infinitives	69, 144-153, 128
infinitives: accents added to	203
infinitives: after al	182
infinitives: after another verb	134, 135, 145-153, 156
infinitives: after prepositions	144-153, 178, 185, 188, 189, 191
infinitives: used in instructions	89
infinitives: used with direct object pronouns	47, 50, 51, 52, 203
<i>-ing</i>	82, 84, 125, 126, 127, 128, 156
instructions	see imperative
interesar	155
interrogative adjectives	24, 32
interrogative pronouns	41, 65
invariable adjectives	22
inversion	161-163
-ir verbs: conditional	100, 101

-ir verbs: future	97
-ir verbs: gerund	127
-ir verbs: imperative	86, 87
-ir verbs: imperfect	112
-ir verbs: imperfect subjunctive	141
-ir verbs: past participle	115
-ir verbs: perfect	115, 116
-ir verbs: pluperfect	119
-ir verbs: present continuous	84
-ir verbs: present simple	75
-ir verbs: present subjunctive	137
-ir verbs: preterite	104, 105
ir a	97, 180
ir with gerund	125
irregular comparative and superlative adjectives	27, 28
irregular comparative and superlative adverbs	170
irregular verbs	69, 70
irregular verbs: conditional	102
irregular verbs: future tense	98, 99

irregular verbs: imperative	86
irregular verbs: imperfect tense	113
irregular verbs: passive	123
irregular verbs: perfect tense	116, 117
irregular verbs: pluperfect tense	120
irregular verbs: present tense	76, 77
irregular verbs: preterite	106
irregular verbs: subjunctive	137, 138, 142
-ísimo	29, 203
<i>it</i>	43, 46, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133
<i>its</i>	35
<i>itself</i>	91
jobs	16
la	1, 5, 11, 46, 47, 52
la de	57
la mía	56, 57
la nuestra	56, 57
la que	61, 62, 63, 64
las de	57

la suya	56, 57
la tuya	56, 57
la vuestra	56, 57
languages	4
las	11, 46, 47, 52
las de	57
las mías	56, 57
las nuestras	56, 57
las que	61, 62, 63, 64
las tuyas	56, 57
las vuestras	56, 57
le	49, 50, 51, 52, 154, 155
<i>least</i>	26, 27, 169, 170
les	49, 51, 52, 154, 155
<i>less</i>	26, 169, 170
<i>let's</i>	85, 89
llevar (puesto)	16
llevar: with time expression	126
llover	129
lo	17, 18, 46, 47, 52
lo de	17
lo que	17, 63

los	11, 46, 47
los de	57
los míos	56, 57
los nuestros	56, 57
los que	61, 62, 63, 64
los suyos	56, 57
los tuyos	56, 57
los vuestros	56, 57
luego	173
mal	22, 167, 170
malo	22, 27
mas	204
más	26, 27, 169, 170, 176, 204
más de	170, 183
masculine adjectives	19-23
masculine and feminine forms of words	2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 19-23
masculine nouns	1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11
mayor	21, 27, 28
me	46, 47, 49, 50, 52, 93, 103, 109, 114, 118, 154
<i>me</i>	49, 54
medio	25

mejor	21, 27, 28, 131, 170
menor	27, 28
menos	26, 27, 55, 169, 170, 176
menos de	170, 183
mi	35, 204
mí	54, 204
mía	37, 56
mías	37, 56
mientras	140, 194
mientras que	194
mil	16, 23
millones	23
<i>mine</i>	37, 56
mío	37, 56
míos	37, 56
mirar	50
mis	35
mismo	25
months	4, 210-211
<i>more</i>	26, 169, 170
<i>most</i>	26, 27, 169, 170
mucho	39, 58, 170, 175
muy	28, 173

<i>my</i>	35
<i>myself</i>	91-96
nada	59, 60, 159
nadie	159
naming words	see nouns
nationalities: adjectives	20
negatives	157-159
negative questions	164
<i>neither ... nor</i>	195
nevar	129
<i>never</i>	158, 159
ni ... ni	159, 195
ningún	22, 159
ninguna	59, 159
ninguno	22, 59, 60, 159
no	105, 157, 158, 164, 165, 173
no creer que	136
no ... jamas	158
<i>no longer</i>	158
no ... más	158, 159
<i>no more</i>	158
no ... nada	158
no ... nadie	158

no ... ni ... ni	158
no ... ninguno	158
no ... nunca	158
no pensar que	136
no ... tampoco	158
<i>nobody</i>	58, 158, 159
nos	46, 47, 49, 50, 52, 93, 96, 103, 109, 114, 118, 154
nosotras	42, 44, 54
nosotros	42, 44, 54
<i>not</i>	157, 158, 164, 165
<i>nothing</i>	41, 59, 158, 159
nouns	1-9
nouns: endings	2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7
nouns: feminine	1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11
nouns: masculine	1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11
nouns: plural	1, 7
nouns: singular	1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 9
nuestra	35, 37, 56
nuestras	35, 37, 56
nuestro	35, 37, 56
nuestros	35, 37, 56
nuevo	25

numbers	24, 206-208
nunca	159
o	192
o ... o	195
ó	192
object	122
object pronouns	41, 46- 53, 88, 89, 117, 120, 128, 157, 203
<i>of</i>	183
<i>on</i>	13, 185
<i>one</i>	93, 118, 121, 208, 209
<i>one another</i>	96
<i>oneself</i>	91
<i>or</i>	192
orders and instructions	see imperative
ordinal numbers	208
os	46, 47, 49, 50, 52, 93, 96, 103, 109, 114, 118, 154
<i>other</i>	39, 59
otra	39, 59
otras	39, 59
otro	16, 39, 59
otros	39, 59

<i>our</i>	35
<i>ours</i>	56
<i>ourselves</i>	91-95
para	137, 185-186
para que	136
parece que	132, 136
participles: past	81, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 126, 159
participles: present see	13, 36, 53, 95
gerund parts of the body	
pasar(se)	126
passive	81, 122-124, 186
passive: irregular verbs	123
past participles	81, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 122, 123, 126, 159
past participles: irregular	116, 120
past perfect	see pluperfect
peor	21, 27, 28, 170
pequeño	27, 28
perfect tense	115-118, 189
perfect tense: irregular verbs	116
perfect tense: reflexive verbs	117, 118

perfect tense: word order	177
pero	192
personal a	50, 58, 182
personal pronouns	41, 42-55
pluperfect tense	119-121
pluperfect tense: irregular verbs	120
pluperfect tense: reflexive verbs	120, 121
pluperfect tense: word order	177
plural	7, 8, 9, 21, 22
pobre	25
poco	59, 170, 175
poder	146
por	122, 152, 186, 187
por debajo de	187
por delante de	187
por encima de	187, 191
por lo general	17
por lo menos	17
por qué	65, 161, 193
porque	192, 193
possession	36, 183

possessive	
adjectives	24, 35-38, 53
possessive adjectives:	35, 36, 37, 38
agreement	
possessive pronouns	41, 56-57
prepositions	178-191
prepositions: after	181, 183, 185, 188
adjectives	
prepositions: after verbs	145, 147, 148, 149, 150-153
prepositions: followed by	
infinitive	144-153, 178, 185, 188, 189, 191
present continuous	82, 84
present participle	see gerund
present perfect	see perfect tense
present simple	72
present subjunctive	134-140, 174
present tense	71-84, 189
present tense: irregular	76
verbs	
present tense: reflexive	92
verbs	
preterite	104-109, 110
preterite: irregular verbs	106

preterite: reflexive verbs	109
preterite: spelling changes	108, 109
prices and rates	14, 180
primer	22, 208
primero	22, 208
pronouns	41-68
pronouns: demonstrative	41, 67, 68
pronouns: direct object	46, 47, 48, 52
pronouns: indefinite	41, 58
pronouns: indirect object	49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 154
pronouns: interrogative	41, 65
pronouns: object	41, 46- 53, 88, 89, 117, 120, 128, 157, 203
pronouns: possessive	41, 56, 57
pronouns: reflexive	41, 91-94, 99, 103, 109, 114, 117, 118, 120, 121
pronouns: relative	41, 61, 62, 63, 64
pronouns: subject	41-45, 70-76
pronouns: word order	47, 50, 51, 52
pronunciation	197-199
pues	194
que	26, 27, 28, 29, 61, 62, 63, 64, 135, 136, 169, 170, 193

qué	16, 32, 65, 66, 161, 162, 163
qué ... mas + adjective	34
qué ... tan + adjective	34
quedar	155
querer	146
querer decir	147
question words	32, 33, 65, 66, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 205
questions	65, 66, 160-165
questions: indirect	33, 164
quien	61, 62
quién	65, 66, 161, 162, 163
quienes	61
quiénes	65, 66, 162, 163
quizás	173, 174
radical-changing verbs	76, 77, 107, 108, 139
rápido	168
recién	167
reflexive pronouns	41, 91-96, 99, 103, 109, 114, 117, 120, 121, 128
reflexive pronouns: word order	94
reflexive verbs	53, 91-96, 99, 103, 109, 114, 117,

	120, 121, 124, 128
reflexive verbs: conditional	103
reflexive verbs: future tense	99
reflexive verbs: imperfect tense	114
reflexive verbs: orders and instructions	94
reflexive verbs: perfect tense	117, 118
reflexive verbs: pluperfect tense	120, 121
reflexive verbs: present tense	92, 93, 95, 96
relative pronouns	41, 61-64
reported questions	33, 164, 205
root-changing verbs	see radical-changing verbs
saber	146
salvo	55
same	25
se	52, 91, 92, 93, 95, 96, 99, 103, 109, 114, 117, 118, 120, 121, 133
se cree	133
se dice	133
se puede	133

según	55
ser	80-83, 122, 123, 131, 132
<i>she</i>	42
si	54, 143, 192, 193, 204
sí	54, 165, 174, 193, 204
siempre	174
sin	16, 137, 190, 191
sin que	136
<i>since</i>	79, 114, 118, 121, 130, 189
singular adjectives	19, 20, 21
singular nouns	1-6, 9
sino	192
sobre	191
solo	204
sólo	174, 204
<i>some</i>	15, 39
<i>somebody</i>	58
<i>something</i>	58
spelling	196-199
stress	200-205
su	35
subject	122, 154
subject pronouns	41-45, 70, 72, 73, 74, 76

subjunctive	134-143, 174
subjunctive: imperfect	141, 142, 143
subjunctive: irregular verbs	138, 139, 142
subjunctive: present	134-140, 174
superlative adjectives	26, 27
superlative adverbs	169-170
sus	35
suya	37, 56
suyas	37, 56
suyo	37, 56
suyos	37, 56
syllables	200-202
tan ... como	28, 174
tan ... que	174
tanto	28, 39, 59, 175
tanto ... como	28, 170
te	46, 47, 49, 50, 93, 103, 109, 114, 118, 154, 155, 204
té	204
tener	16, 116, 182
tener que	146
tense	69
tenses: conditional	100-103

tenses: future	97-99
tenses: imperfect	110-114
tenses: perfect	115-118
tenses: pluperfect	119-121
tenses: present	71-84
tenses: present continuous	84
tenses: preterite	104-109
tenses: sequence of	139, 140
tercer	22, 208
tercero	22, 208
<i>than</i>	26, 27, 28, 29, 169, 170
<i>that</i>	30, 61, 62, 63, 64, 67, 68, 193
<i>that one/those ones</i>	67, 68
<i>the</i>	10, 11, 12
<i>their</i>	35
<i>theirs</i>	37
<i>them</i>	46, 49, 54
<i>themselves</i>	54, 91
<i>there</i>	116
<i>these</i>	30, 67
<i>they</i>	42
<i>this</i>	30, 67
<i>this one/these ones</i>	67, 68

<i>those</i>	30, 67
ti	54
time	13, 81, 209
todavía	174, 177
todo	59
tratarse de	133
tu	35, 42, 204
tú	42, 44, 70, 204
tus	35
tuya	37, 56
tuyas	37, 56
tuyo	37, 56
tuyos	37, 56
u	192
un	1, 15, 22, 206, 207
un poco	175
una	1, 15, 206, 207
unas	15
<i>under</i>	188, 207
uno	207
uno ... (el) otro	59
unos	15
unos .. (los) otros	60

<i>us</i>	46, 49, 54
usted	42, 44, 54
ustedes	42, 44, 54
vale la pena	132
valer	132
vamos a	89
varios	39, 60
Vd.	42, 54
Vds.	42, 54
venir with gerund	125
verbal idioms	154-156
verb forms: after prepositions	178, 188, 189
verbs	69-156
verbs: active	122, 124
verbs: followed by a	148
verbs: followed by an infinitive	145, 146
verbs: followed by de	148
verbs: followed by direct object	153
verbs: infinitives	144
verbs : irregular	69

verbs: prepositions after	145, 147, 148, 149, 150-153
verbs: regular	69
verbs: spelling changes	197
verdad	131, 136, 160, 164, 165
viejo	25
vosotras	42, 44, 54
vosotros	42, 44, 54
vowels	200-202
vuestra	35, 37, 56
vuestras	35, 37, 56
vuestro	35, 37, 56
vuestros	35, 37, 56
<i>we</i>	42
weather	129
<i>what</i>	17, 32, 65, 66, 163
<i>what (a) ...!</i>	34, 205
<i>when</i>	140, 161, 162, 163, 194
<i>where</i>	161, 162, 164
<i>whether</i>	193
<i>which</i>	32, 33, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 164
<i>which one(s)</i>	65
<i>while</i>	194
<i>who</i>	61, 62

<i>whom</i>	61, 62
<i>whose</i>	64, 66, 163
<i>why</i>	161, 193
<i>with</i>	54, 55, 152, 188
<i>without</i>	16, 136, 190
<i>will</i>	97, 98, 99
word order: in imperatives	88, 89
word order: in indirect questions	33, 164
word order: in questions	160, 161, 163, 164
word order: with adjectives	19, 24
word order: with adverbs	177
word order: with gerunds	128
word order: with negatives	157, 158, 159
word order: with object pronouns	50, 52, 117, 120
word order: with reflexive pronouns	94
<i>would</i>	100
y	192
ya	174
years	184, 210
<i>yes</i>	204

yo	42, 70
<i>you</i>	42, 46, 49, 54
<i>you: ways of saying</i>	44
<i>your</i>	35
<i>yours</i>	37
<i>yourself</i>	54, 91
<i>yourselves</i>	54, 91

VERB TABLES

Introduction

The **Verb Tables** in the following section contain 83 tables of Spanish verbs (some regular and some irregular) in alphabetical order. Each table shows you the following forms: **Present, Preterite, Future, Present Subjunctive, Imperfect, Conditional, Imperative** and the **Past Participle** and **Gerund**. For more information on these tenses, how they are formed, when they are used and so on, you should look at the section on **Verbs** in the main text on pages [69–156](#).

In order to help you use the verbs shown in the **Verb Tables** correctly, there are also a number of example phrases at the bottom of each page to show the verb as it is used in context.

In Spanish there are both **regular** verbs (their forms follow the normal rules) and **irregular** verbs (their forms do not follow the normal rules). The regular verbs in these tables are:

hablar (regular **-ar** verb, Verb Table 39)

comer (regular **-er** verb, Verb Table 16)

vivir (regular **-ir** verb, Verb Table 81)

The irregular verbs are shown in full.

The **Verb Index** at the end of this section contains over 1200 verbs, each of which is cross-referred to one of the verbs

given in the Verb Tables. The table shows the patterns that the verb listed in the index follows.

► abolir (to abolish)

PRESENT

(nosotros/as) abolimos
(vosotros/as) abolís

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

not used

* Present tense only used in persons shown

PRETERITE

(yo) abolí
(tú) aboliste
(él/ella/usted) abolió
(nosotros/as) abolimos
(vosotros/as) abolisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abolieron

IMPERFECT

(yo) abolía
(tú) abolías
(él/ella/usted) abolía
(nosotros/as) abolíamos
(vosotros/as) abolíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abolían

FUTURE

(yo) aboliré
(tú) abolirás
(él/ella/usted) abolirá
(nosotros/as) aboliremos
(vosotros/as) aboliréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abolirán

CONDITIONAL

(yo) aboliría
(tú) abolirías
(él/ella/usted) aboliría
(nosotros/as) aboliríamos
(vosotros/as) aboliríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abolirían

IMPERATIVE

abolid

GERUND

aboliendo

PAST PARTICIPLE

abolido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Hay que **abolirlo**. It ought to be abolished.*

***Han abolido** la pena de muerte. They have abolished the death penalty.*

***Abolieron** la esclavitud. They abolished slavery.*

► **abrir** (to open)

PRESENT

(yo) abro
(tú) abres
(él/ella/usted) abre
(nosotros/as) abrimos
(vosotros/as) abris
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abren

PRETERITE

(yo) abrí
(tú) abriste
(él/ella/usted) abrió
(nosotros/as) abrimos
(vosotros/as) abristeis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abrieron

FUTURE

(yo) abriré
(tú) abrirás
(él/ella/usted) abrirá
(nosotros/as) abriremos
(vosotros/as) abriréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abrirán

IMPERATIVE

abre / abrid

GERUND

abriendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) abra
(tú) abras
(él/ella/usted) abra
(nosotros/as) abramos
(vosotros/as) abráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abran

IMPERFECT

(yo) abría
(tú) abrías
(él/ella/usted) abría
(nosotros/as) abriáramos
(vosotros/as) abriáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abrían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) abriría
(tú) abrirías
(él/ella/usted) abriría
(nosotros/as) abríramos
(vosotros/as) abrírais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) abrirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

abierto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No **abras** ese grifo.* Don't turn on that tap.

***Han abierto** un restaurante cerca de aquí.* They've opened a new restaurant near here.

***Abrirán** todas las puertas de la catedral.* They'll open all the doors of the cathedral.

► actuar (to act)

PRESENT

(yo) actúo
(tú) actúas
(él/ella/usted) actúa
(nosotros/as) actuamos
(vosotros/as) actuáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) actúan

PRETERITE

(yo) actué
(tú) actuaste
(él/ella/usted) actuó
(nosotros/as) actuamos
(vosotros/as) actuasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) actuaron

FUTURE

(yo) actuaré
(tú) actuarás
(él/ella/usted) actuará
(nosotros/as) actuaremos
(vosotros/as) actuaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) actuarán

IMPERATIVE

actúa / actuad

GERUND

actuando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) actúe
(tú) actúes
(él/ella/usted) actúe
(nosotros/as) actuemos
(vosotros/as) actuéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) actúen

IMPERFECT

(yo) actuaba
(tú) actuabas
(él/ella/usted) actuaba
(nosotros/as) actuábamos
(vosotros/as) actuabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) actuaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) actuaría
(tú) actuarías
(él/ella/usted) actuaría
(nosotros/as) actuaríamos
(vosotros/as) actuaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) actuarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

actuado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Actúa de una forma muy rara. He's acting very strangely.

Actuó en varias películas. He was in several films.

¿Quién **actuará** en su próxima película? Who will be in his next film?

► **adquirir** (to acquire)

PRESENT

(yo) **adquiero**
(tú) **adquieres**
(él/ella/usted) **adquiere**
(nosotros/as) **adquirimos**
(vosotros/as) **adquirís**
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) **adquieren**

PRETERITE

(yo) **adquirí**
(tú) **adquiriste**
(él/ella/usted) **adquirió**
(nosotros/as) **adquirimos**
(vosotros/as) **adquiristeis**
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) **adquirieron**

FUTURE

(yo) **adquiriré**
(tú) **adquirirás**
(él/ella/usted) **adquirirá**
(nosotros/as) **adquiriremos**
(vosotros/as) **adquiriréis**
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) **adquirirán**

IMPERATIVE

adquiere / **adquirid**

GERUND

adquiriendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) **adquiera**
(tú) **adquieras**
(él/ella/usted) **adquiera**
(nosotros/as) **adquiramos**
(vosotros/as) **adquiráis**
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) **adquieran**

IMPERFECT

(yo) **adquiría**
(tú) **adquirías**
(él/ella/usted) **adquiría**
(nosotros/as) **adquiríamos**
(vosotros/as) **adquiríais**
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) **adquirían**

CONDITIONAL

(yo) **adquiriría**
(tú) **adquirirías**
(él/ella/usted) **adquiriría**
(nosotros/as) **adquiriríamos**
(vosotros/as) **adquiriríais**
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) **adquirirían**

PAST PARTICIPLE

adquirido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Hemos adquirido una colección de sellos. We've bought a stamp collection.

Al final adquirirán los derechos de publicación. They will get the publishing rights in the end.

¿Lo adquirirías por ese precio? Would you buy it for that price?

► **almorzar** (to have lunch)

PRESENT

(yo) almuerzo
(tú) almuerzas
(él/ella/usted) almuerza
(nosotros/as) almorzamos
(vosotros/as) almorzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) almuerzan

PRETERITE

(yo) almorcé
(tú) almorzaste
(él/ella/usted) almorzó
(nosotros/as) almorzamos
(vosotros/as) almorzasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) almorzaron

FUTURE

(yo) almorzaré
(tú) almorzarás
(él/ella/usted) almorzará
(nosotros/as) almorzaremos
(vosotros/as) almorzaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) almorzarán

IMPERATIVE

almuerza / almorзад

GERUND

almorzando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) almuerce
(tú) almuerces
(él/ella/usted) almuerce
(nosotros/as) almorcemos
(vosotros/as) almorcéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) almuercen

IMPERFECT

(yo) almorzaba
(tú) almorzabas
(él/ella/usted) almorzaba
(nosotros/as) almorzábamos
(vosotros/as) almorzabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) almorzaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) almorzaría
(tú) almorzarías
(él/ella/usted) almorzaría
(nosotros/as) almorzaríamos
(vosotros/as) almorzaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) almorzarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

almorzado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿A qué hora **almuerzas**? What time do you have lunch?

Almorcé en un bar. I had lunch in a bar.

Mañana almorzaremos todos juntos. We'll all have lunch together tomorrow.

▶ andar (to walk)

PRESENT

(yo) ando
(tú) andas
(él/ella/usted) anda
(nosotros/as) andamos
(vosotros/as) andáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) andan

PRETERITE

(yo) anduve
(tú) anduviste
(él/ella/usted) anduvo
(nosotros/as) anduvimos
(vosotros/as) anduvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) anduvieron

FUTURE

(yo) andaré
(tú) andarás
(él/ella/usted) andará
(nosotros/as) andaremos
(vosotros/as) andaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) andarán

IMPERATIVE

anda / andad

GERUND

andando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) ande
(tú) andes
(él/ella/usted) ande
(nosotros/as) andemos
(vosotros/as) andéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) anden

IMPERFECT

(yo) andaba
(tú) andabas
(él/ella/usted) andaba
(nosotros/as) andábamos
(vosotros/as) andabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) andaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) andaría
(tú) andarías
(él/ella/usted) andaría
(nosotros/as) andaríamos
(vosotros/as) andaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) andarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

andado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Voy andando al trabajo todos los días. I walk to work every day.

Anduvimos al menos 10 km. We walked at least 10 km.

No sé por dónde *andar*á. I don't know where he will be.

► **aunar** (to join together)

PRESENT

(yo) aúno
(tú) aúnas
(él/ella/usted) aúna
(nosotros/as) aunamos
(vosotros/as) aunáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) aúnan

PRETERITE

(yo) auné
(tú) aunaste
(él/ella/usted) aunó
(nosotros/as) aunamos
(vosotros/as) aunasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) aunaron

FUTURE

(yo) aunaré
(tú) aunarás
(él/ella/usted) aunará
(nosotros/as) aunaremos
(vosotros/as) aunaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) aunarán

IMPERATIVE

aúna / aunad

GERUND

aunando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) aúne
(tú) aúnes
(él/ella/usted) aúne
(nosotros/as) aunemos
(vosotros/as) aunéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) aúnen

IMPERFECT

(yo) aunaba
(tú) aunabas
(él/ella/usted) aunaba
(nosotros/as) aunábamos
(vosotros/as) aunabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) aunaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) aunaría
(tú) aunarías
(él/ella/usted) aunaría
(nosotros/as) aunaríamos
(vosotros/as) aunaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) aunarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

aunado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*El candidato **aúna** experiencia y entusiasmo.* The candidate has both experience and enthusiasm.

*Han **aúnado** fuerzas para combatir la violencia.* They've joined forces to combat violence.

*Este organismo **aunará** a todos los países europeos.* This organization will bring together all the countries of Europe.

▶ avergonzar (to shame)

PRESENT

(yo) avergüenzo
(tú) avergüenzas
(él/ella/usted) avergüenza
(nosotros/as) avergonzamos
(vosotros/as) avergonzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) avergüenzan

PRETERITE

(yo) avergoncé
(tú) avergonzaste
(él/ella/usted) avergonzó
(nosotros/as) avergonzamos
(vosotros/as) avergonzasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) avergonzaron

FUTURE

(yo) avergonzaré
(tú) avergonzarás
(él/ella/usted) avergonzará
(nosotros/as) avergonzaremos
(vosotros/as) avergonzaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) avergonzarán

IMPERATIVE

avergüenza / avergonzad

GERUND

avergonzando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) avergüencie
(tú) avergüences
(él/ella/usted) avergüencie
(nosotros/as) avergoncemos
(vosotros/as) avergoncéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) avergüencen

IMPERFECT

(yo) avergonzaba
(tú) avergonzabas
(él/ella/usted) avergonzaba
(nosotros/as) avergonzábamos
(vosotros/as) avergonzabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) avergonzaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) avergonzaría
(tú) avergonzarías
(él/ella/usted) avergonzaría
(nosotros/as) avergonzaríamos
(vosotros/as) avergonzaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) avergonzarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

avergonzado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

No me avergüenzo de nada. I'm not ashamed of anything.
Cuando me lo dijo me avergoncé. I was embarrassed when he told me.

Te avergonzarás de eso. You'll be ashamed of that.
Su actitud avergonzó a sus padres. His parents were embarrassed by his attitude.

► averiguar (to find out)

PRESENT

(yo) averiguo
(tú) averiguas
(él/ella/usted) averigua
(nosotros/as) averiguamos
(vosotros/as) averiguáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguan

PRETERITE

(yo) averigüé
(tú) averiguaste
(él/ella/usted) averiguó
(nosotros/as) averiguamos
(vosotros/as) averiguasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguaron

FUTURE

(yo) averiguaré
(tú) averiguarás
(él/ella/usted) averiguará
(nosotros/as) averiguaremos
(vosotros/as) averiguaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguarán

IMPERATIVE

averigua / averiguad

GERUND

averiguando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) averigüe
(tú) averigües
(él/ella/usted) averigüe
(nosotros/as) averigüemos
(vosotros/as) averigüéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averigüen

IMPERFECT

(yo) averiguaba
(tú) averiguabas
(él/ella/usted) averiguaba
(nosotros/as) averiguábamos
(vosotros/as) averiguabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) averiguaría
(tú) averiguarías
(él/ella/usted) averiguaría
(nosotros/as) averiguaríamos
(vosotros/as) averiguaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

averiguado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Cuándo lo **averiguaron**? When did they find out?

Lo **averiguaré** pronto. I'll find out soon.

En cuanto lo **averigüe** te lo digo. I'll tell you as soon as I find out.

► bendecir (to bless)

PRESENT

(yo) bendigo
(tú) bendices
(él/ella/usted) bendice
(nosotros/as) bendecimos
(vosotros/as) bendecís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendicen

PRETERITE

(yo) bendije
(tú) bendijiste
(él/ella/usted) bendijo
(nosotros/as) bendijimos
(vosotros/as) bendijisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendijeron

FUTURE

(yo) bendeciré
(tú) bendecirás
(él/ella/usted) bendecirá
(nosotros/as) bendeciremos
(vosotros/as) bendeciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendecirán

IMPERATIVE

bendice / bendecid

GERUND

bendiciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) bendiga
(tú) bendigas
(él/ella/usted) bendiga
(nosotros/as) bendigamos
(vosotros/as) bendigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendigan

IMPERFECT

(yo) bendecía
(tú) bendecías
(él/ella/usted) bendecía
(nosotros/as) bendecíamos
(vosotros/as) bendecíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendecían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) bendeciría
(tú) bendecirías
(él/ella/usted) bendeciría
(nosotros/as) bendeciríamos
(vosotros/as) bendeciríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendecirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

bendecido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Dios te **bendiga**.* God bless you!

*El sacerdote **ha bendecido** la nueva tienda.* The priest has blessed the new shop.

*Mi padre **bendijo** la comida.* My father said grace.

► **caber** (to fit)

PRESENT

(yo) quepo
(tú) cabes
(él/ella/usted) cabe
(nosotros/as) cabemos
(vosotros/as) cabéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) caben

PRETERITE

(yo) cupe
(tú) cupiste
(él/ella/usted) cupo
(nosotros/as) cupimos
(vosotros/as) cupisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cupieron

FUTURE

(yo) cabré
(tú) cabrás
(él/ella/usted) cabrá
(nosotros/as) cabremos
(vosotros/as) cabréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cabrán

IMPERATIVE

cabe / cabed

GERUND

cabiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) quepa
(tú) quepas
(él/ella/usted) quepa
(nosotros/as) quepamos
(vosotros/as) quepáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) quepan

IMPERFECT

(yo) cabía
(tú) cabías
(él/ella/usted) cabía
(nosotros/as) cabíamos
(vosotros/as) cabíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cabían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) cabría
(tú) cabrías
(él/ella/usted) cabría
(nosotros/as) cabríamos
(vosotros/as) cabríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cabrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

cabido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Aquí no **cabe**.* There's not enough room here for it.
*No **cabíamos** todos.* There wasn't enough room for all of us.
*¿Crees que **cabrá**?* Do you think there will be enough room for it?

► caer (to fall)

PRESENT

(yo) caigo
(tú) caes
(él/ella/usted) cae
(nosotros/as) caemos
(vosotros/as) caéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) caen

PRETERITE

(yo) caí
(tú) caíste
(él/ella/usted) cayó
(nosotros/as) caímos
(vosotros/as) caísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cayeron

FUTURE

(yo) caeré
(tú) caerás
(él/ella/usted) caerá
(nosotros/as) caeremos
(vosotros/as) caeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) caerán

IMPERATIVE

cae / caed

GERUND

cayendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) caiga
(tú) caigas
(él/ella/usted) caiga
(nosotros/as) caigamos
(vosotros/as) caigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) caigan

IMPERFECT

(yo) caía
(tú) caías
(él/ella/usted) caía
(nosotros/as) caíamos
(vosotros/as) caíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) caían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) caería
(tú) caerías
(él/ella/usted) caería
(nosotros/as) caeríamos
(vosotros/as) caeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) caerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

caído

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Me caí por las escaleras. I fell down the stairs.

Ese edificio se está cayendo. That building is falling down.

Se me ha caído un guante. I've dropped one of my gloves.

► **cocer** (to boil)

PRESENT

(yo)	cuezo
(tú)	cueces
(él/ella/usted)	cuece
(nosotros/as)	cocemos
(vosotros/as)	cocéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cuecen

PRETERITE

(yo)	cocí
(tú)	cociste
(él/ella/usted)	coció
(nosotros/as)	cocimos
(vosotros/as)	cocisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocieron

FUTURE

(yo)	coceré
(tú)	cocerás
(él/ella/usted)	cocerá
(nosotros/as)	coceremos
(vosotros/as)	coceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocerán

IMPERATIVE

cuece / coced

GERUND

cociendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	cueza
(tú)	cuezas
(él/ella/usted)	cueza
(nosotros/as)	cozamos
(vosotros/as)	cozáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cuezan

IMPERFECT

(yo)	cocía
(tú)	cocías
(él/ella/usted)	cocía
(nosotros/as)	cocíamos
(vosotros/as)	cocíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocían

CONDITIONAL

(yo)	cocería
(tú)	cocerías
(él/ella/usted)	cocería
(nosotros/as)	coceríamos
(vosotros/as)	coceríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

cocido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Cuécelo a fuego lento. Cook it over a gentle heat.

Aquí nos estamos cociendo. It's boiling in here.

No lo cuezas demasiado. Don't overcook it.

► **coger** (to catch)

PRESENT

(yo) cojo
(tú) coges
(él/ella/usted) coge
(nosotros/as) cogemos
(vosotros/as) cogéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cogen

PRETERITE

(yo) cogí
(tú) cogiste
(él/ella/usted) cogió
(nosotros/as) cogimos
(vosotros/as) cogisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cogieron

FUTURE

(yo) cogeré
(tú) cogerás
(él/ella/usted) cogerá
(nosotros/as) cogéremos
(vosotros/as) cogereís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cogerán

IMPERATIVE

coge / coged

GERUND

cogiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) coja
(tú) cojas
(él/ella/usted) coja
(nosotros/as) cojamos
(vosotros/as) cojáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cojan

IMPERFECT

(yo) cogía
(tú) cogías
(él/ella/usted) cogía
(nosotros/as) cogíamos
(vosotros/as) cogíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cogían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) cogería
(tú) cogerías
(él/ella/usted) cogería
(nosotros/as) cogeriáamos
(vosotros/as) cogeriáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cogierían

PAST PARTICIPLE

cogido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

La cogí entre mis brazos. I took her in my arms.

Estuvimos cogiendo setas. We were picking mushrooms.

¿Por qué no coges el tren de las seis? Why don't you get the six o'clock train?

► **comer** (to eat)

PRESENT

(yo) como
(tú) comes
(él/ella/usted) come
(nosotros/as) comemos
(vosotros/as) coméis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) comen

PRETERITE

(yo) comí
(tú) comiste
(él/ella/usted) comió
(nosotros/as) comimos
(vosotros/as) comisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) comieron

FUTURE

(yo) comeré
(tú) comerás
(él/ella/usted) comerá
(nosotros/as) comeremos
(vosotros/as) comeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) comerán

IMPERATIVE

come / comed

GERUND

comiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) coma
(tú) comas
(él/ella/usted) coma
(nosotros/as) comamos
(vosotros/as) comáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) coman

IMPERFECT

(yo) comía
(tú) comías
(él/ella/usted) comía
(nosotros/as) comíamos
(vosotros/as) comíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) comían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) comería
(tú) comerías
(él/ella/usted) comería
(nosotros/as) comeríamos
(vosotros/as) comeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) comerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

comido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No **come** carne.* He doesn't eat meat.

*No **comas** tan deprisa.* Don't eat so fast.

*Se **ha comido** todo.* He's eaten it all.

► conducir (to drive, to lead)

PRESENT

(yo) conduzco
(tú) conduces
(él/ella/usted) conduce
(nosotros/as) conducimos
(vosotros/as) conducís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) conducen

PRETERITE

(yo) conduje
(tú) condujiste
(él/ella/usted) condujo
(nosotros/as) conducimos
(vosotros/as) condujisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) condujeron

FUTURE

(yo) conduciré
(tú) conducirás
(él/ella/usted) conducirá
(nosotros/as) conduciremos
(vosotros/as) conduciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) conducirán

IMPERATIVE

conduce / conducid

GERUND

conduciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) conduzca
(tú) conduzcas
(él/ella/usted) conduzca
(nosotros/as) conduzcamos
(vosotros/as) conduzcaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) conduzcan

IMPERFECT

(yo) conducía
(tú) conducías
(él/ella/usted) conducía
(nosotros/as) conducíamos
(vosotros/as) conducíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) conducían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) conduciría
(tú) conducirías
(él/ella/usted) conduciría
(nosotros/as) conduciríamos
(vosotros/as) conduciríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) conducirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

conducido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Conduces muy bien. You are a really good driver.

¿Condujiste tú? Did you drive?

Él los conducirá a la mesa. He'll show you to your table.

► **construir** (to build)

PRESENT

(yo) construyo
(tú) construyes
(él/ella/usted) construye
(nosotros/as) construimos
(vosotros/as) construís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) construyen

PRETERITE

(yo) construí
(tú) construiste
(él/ella/usted) construyó
(nosotros/as) construimos
(vosotros/as) construisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) construyeron

FUTURE

(yo) construiré
(tú) construirás
(él/ella/usted) construirá
(nosotros/as) construiremos
(vosotros/as) construiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) construirán

IMPERATIVE

construye / construid

GERUND

construyendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) construya
(tú) construyas
(él/ella/usted) construya
(nosotros/as) construyamos
(vosotros/as) construyáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) construyan

IMPERFECT

(yo) construía
(tú) construías
(él/ella/usted) construía
(nosotros/as) construíamos
(vosotros/as) construíaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) construían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) construiría
(tú) construirías
(él/ella/usted) construiría
(nosotros/as) construiríamos
(vosotros/as) construiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) construirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

construido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Están **construyendo** una escuela.* They are building a new school.

*Yo solo **construí** el puzzle.* I did the jigsaw puzzle on my own.

*Aquí **construirán** una autopista.* They're going to build a new motorway here.

► contar (to tell, to count)

PRESENT

(yo) cuento
(tú) cuentas
(él/ella/usted) cuenta
(nosotros/as) contamos
(vosotros/as) contáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cuentan

PRETERITE

(yo) conté
(tú) contaste
(él/ella/usted) contó
(nosotros/as) contamos
(vosotros/as) contasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) contaron

FUTURE

(yo) contaré
(tú) contarás
(él/ella/usted) contará
(nosotros/as) contaremos
(vosotros/as) contaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) contarán

IMPERATIVE

cuenta / contad

GERUND

contando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) cuente
(tú) cuentes
(él/ella/usted) cuente
(nosotros/as) contemos
(vosotros/as) contéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cuenten

IMPERFECT

(yo) contaba
(tú) contabas
(él/ella/usted) contaba
(nosotros/as) contábamos
(vosotros/as) contabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) contaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) contaría
(tú) contarías
(él/ella/usted) contaría
(nosotros/as) contaríamos
(vosotros/as) contaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) contarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

contado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Venga, **cuéntamelo**. Come on, tell me.

Nos **contó** un secreto. He told us a secret.

Prométeme que no se lo **contarás** a nadie. Promise me you won't tell anyone.

► **crecer** (to grow)

PRESENT

(yo) crezco
(tú) creces
(él/ella/usted) crece
(nosotros/as) crecemos
(vosotros/as) crecéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) crecen

PRETERITE

(yo) crecí
(tú) creciste
(él/ella/usted) creció
(nosotros/as) crecimos
(vosotros/as) crecisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) crecieron

FUTURE

(yo) creceré
(tú) crecerás
(él/ella/usted) crecerá
(nosotros/as) creceremos
(vosotros/as) creceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) crecerán

IMPERATIVE

crece / creced

GERUND

creciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) crezca
(tú) crezcas
(él/ella/usted) crezca
(nosotros/as) crezcamos
(vosotros/as) crezcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) crezcan

IMPERFECT

(yo) crecía
(tú) crecías
(él/ella/usted) crecía
(nosotros/as) crecíamos
(vosotros/as) crecíaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) crecían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) crecería
(tú) crecerías
(él/ella/usted) crecería
(nosotros/as) creceríamos
(vosotros/as) creceríaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) crecerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

crecido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Esas plantas **crecen** en Chile.* Those plants grow in Chile.

***Crecimos** juntos.* We grew up together.

*Cuando **crezca**, ya verás.* You'll see, when he grows up.

► **cruzar** (to cross)

PRESENT

(yo) cruzo
(tú) cruzas
(él/ella/usted) cruza
(nosotros/as) cruzamos
(vosotros/as) cruzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cruzan

PRETERITE

(yo) crucé
(tú) cruzaste
(él/ella/usted) cruzó
(nosotros/as) cruzamos
(vosotros/as) cruzasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cruzaron

FUTURE

(yo) cruzaré
(tú) cruzarás
(él/ella/usted) cruzará
(nosotros/as) cruzaremos
(vosotros/as) cruzaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cruzarán

IMPERATIVE

cruza / cruzad

GERUND

cruzando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) cruce
(tú) cruces
(él/ella/usted) cruce
(nosotros/as) crucemos
(vosotros/as) crucéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) crucen

IMPERFECT

(yo) cruzaba
(tú) cruzabas
(él/ella/usted) cruzaba
(nosotros/as) cruzábamos
(vosotros/as) cruzabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cruzaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) cruzaría
(tú) cruzarías
(él/ella/usted) cruzaría
(nosotros/as) cruzaríamos
(vosotros/as) cruzaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cruzarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

cruzado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No **cruces** la calle con el semáforo en rojo.* Don't cross the road when it's a red light.

***Cruzaron** la carretera.* They crossed the road.

*Hace tiempo que no **me cruzo** con él.* I haven't seen him for a long time.

► cubrir (to cover)

PRESENT

(yo) cubro
(tú) cubres
(él/ella/usted) cubre
(nosotros/as) cubrimos
(vosotros/as) cubrís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cubren

PRETERITE

(yo) cubrí
(tú) cubriste
(él/ella/usted) cubrió
(nosotros/as) cubrimos
(vosotros/as) cubristeis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cubrieron

FUTURE

(yo) cubriré
(tú) cubrirás
(él/ella/usted) cubrirá
(nosotros/as) cubriremos
(vosotros/as) cubriréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cubrirán

IMPERATIVE

cubre / cubrid

GERUND

cubriendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) cubra
(tú) cubras
(él/ella/usted) cubra
(nosotros/as) cubramos
(vosotros/as) cubráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cubran

IMPERFECT

(yo) cubría
(tú) cubrías
(él/ella/usted) cubría
(nosotros/as) cubriáramos
(vosotros/as) cubrierais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cubrían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) cubriría
(tú) cubrirías
(él/ella/usted) cubriría
(nosotros/as) cubriríamos
(vosotros/as) cubriríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) cubrirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

cubierto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Lo cubrieron con una manta. They covered him with a blanket.

Estaba todo cubierto de nieve. Everything was covered in snow.

Se cubrió de gloria. He covered himself in glory.

► dar (to give)

PRESENT

(yo) doy
(tú) das
(él/ella/usted) da
(nosotros/as) damos
(vosotros/as) dais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dan

PRETERITE

(yo) di
(tú) diste
(él/ella/usted) dio
(nosotros/as) dimos
(vosotros/as) disteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dieron

FUTURE

(yo) daré
(tú) darás
(él/ella/usted) dará
(nosotros/as) daremos
(vosotros/as) daréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) darán

IMPERATIVE

da / dad

GERUND

dando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) dé
(tú) des
(él/ella/usted) dé
(nosotros/as) demos
(vosotros/as) deis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) den

IMPERFECT

(yo) daba
(tú) dabas
(él/ella/usted) daba
(nosotros/as) dábamos
(vosotros/as) dabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) daban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) daría
(tú) darías
(él/ella/usted) daría
(nosotros/as) daríamos
(vosotros/as) daríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) darían

PAST PARTICIPLE

dado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Me **da** miedo la oscuridad. I'm scared of the dark.

Nos **dieron** un par de entradas gratis. They gave us a couple of free tickets.

Te **daré** el número de mi móvil. I'll give you my mobile-phone number.

► decir (to say)

PRESENT

(yo) digo
(tú) dices
(él/ella/usted) dice
(nosotros/as) decimos
(vosotros/as) decís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dicen

PRETERITE

(yo) dije
(tú) dijiste
(él/ella/usted) dijo
(nosotros/as) dijimos
(vosotros/as) dijisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dijeron

FUTURE

(yo) diré
(tú) dirás
(él/ella/usted) dirá
(nosotros/as) diremos
(vosotros/as) diréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirán

IMPERATIVE

di / decid

GERUND

diciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) diga
(tú) digas
(él/ella/usted) diga
(nosotros/as) digamos
(vosotros/as) digáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) digan

IMPERFECT

(yo) decía
(tú) decías
(él/ella/usted) decía
(nosotros/as) decíamos
(vosotros/as) decíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) decían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) diría
(tú) dirías
(él/ella/usted) diría
(nosotros/as) diríamos
(vosotros/as) diríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

dicho

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Pero ¿qué **dices**?* What are you saying?

*Me lo **dijo** ayer.* He told me yesterday.

*¿Te **ha dicho** lo de la boda?* Has he told you about the wedding?

► dirigir (to direct)

PRESENT

(yo) dirijo
(tú) diriges
(él/ella/usted) dirige
(nosotros/as) dirigimos
(vosotros/as) dirigís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirigen

PRETERITE

(yo) dirigí
(tú) dirigiste
(él/ella/usted) dirigió
(nosotros/as) dirigimos
(vosotros/as) dirigisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirigieron

FUTURE

(yo) dirigiré
(tú) dirigirás
(él/ella/usted) dirigirá
(nosotros/as) dirigiremos
(vosotros/as) dirigiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirigirán

IMPERATIVE

dirige / dirigid

GERUND

dirigiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) dirija
(tú) dirijas
(él/ella/usted) dirija
(nosotros/as) dirijamos
(vosotros/as) dirijáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirijan

IMPERFECT

(yo) dirigía
(tú) dirigías
(él/ella/usted) dirigía
(nosotros/as) dirigíamos
(vosotros/as) dirigíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirigían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) dirigiría
(tú) dirigirías
(él/ella/usted) dirigiría
(nosotros/as) dirigiríamos
(vosotros/as) dirigiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dirigirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

dirigido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Dirijo esta empresa desde hace dos años. I've been running this company for two years.

Hace días que no me dirige la palabra. He hasn't spoken to me for days.

Se dirigía a la parada del autobús. He was making his way to the bus stop.

► **distinguir** (to distinguish)

PRESENT

(yo) distingo
(tú) distingues
(él/ella/usted) distingue
(nosotros/as) distinguimos
(vosotros/as) distinguís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) distinguen

PRETERITE

(yo) distinguí
(tú) distinguiste
(él/ella/usted) distinguió
(nosotros/as) distinguimos
(vosotros/as) distinguisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) distinguieron

FUTURE

(yo) distinguiré
(tú) distinguirás
(él/ella/usted) distinguirá
(nosotros/as) distinguiremos
(vosotros/as) distinguiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) distinguirán

IMPERATIVE

distingue / distinguid

GERUND

distinguiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) distinga
(tú) distingas
(él/ella/usted) distinga
(nosotros/as) distingamos
(vosotros/as) distingáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) distingan

IMPERFECT

(yo) distinguía
(tú) distinguías
(él/ella/usted) distinguía
(nosotros/as) distinguíamos
(vosotros/as) distinguíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) distinguían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) distinguiría
(tú) distinguirías
(él/ella/usted) distinguiría
(nosotros/as) distinguiríamos
(vosotros/as) distinguiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) distinguirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

distinguido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No lo **distingo** del azul.* I can't tell the difference between it and the blue one.

*Se **distinguía** desde lejos.* You could see it from the distance.

*No los **distinguiría**.* I wouldn't be able to tell them apart.

► dormir (to sleep)

PRESENT

(yo) duermo
(tú) duermes
(él/ella/usted) duerme
(nosotros/as) dormimos
(vosotros/as) dormís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) duermen

PRETERITE

(yo) dormí
(tú) dormiste
(él/ella/usted) durmió
(nosotros/as) dormimos
(vosotros/as) dormisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) durmieron

FUTURE

(yo) dormiré
(tú) dormirás
(él/ella/usted) dormirá
(nosotros/as) dormiremos
(vosotros/as) dormiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dormirán

IMPERATIVE

duerme / dormid

GERUND

durmiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) duerma
(tú) duermas
(él/ella/usted) duerma
(nosotros/as) durmamos
(vosotros/as) durmáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) duerman

IMPERFECT

(yo) dormía
(tú) dormías
(él/ella/usted) dormía
(nosotros/as) dormíamos
(vosotros/as) dormíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dormían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) dormiría
(tú) dormirías
(él/ella/usted) dormiría
(nosotros/as) dormiríamos
(vosotros/as) dormiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) dormirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

dormido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

No duermo muy bien. I don't sleep very well.

Nos dormimos en el cine. We fell asleep at the cinema.

Durmió durante doce horas. He slept for twelve hours.

► elegir (to choose)

PRESENT

(yo) elijo
(tú) eliges
(él/ella/usted) elige
(nosotros/as) elegimos
(vosotros/as) elegís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) eligen

PRETERITE

(yo) elegí
(tú) elegiste
(él/ella/usted) eligió
(nosotros/as) elegimos
(vosotros/as) elegisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) eligieron

FUTURE

(yo) elegiré
(tú) elegirás
(él/ella/usted) elegirá
(nosotros/as) elegiremos
(vosotros/as) elegiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) elegirán

IMPERATIVE

elige / elegid

GERUND

eligiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) elija
(tú) elijas
(él/ella/usted) elija
(nosotros/as)elijamos
(vosotros/as)elijáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) elijan

IMPERFECT

(yo) elegía
(tú) elegías
(él/ella/usted) elegía
(nosotros/as) elegíamos
(vosotros/as) elegíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) elegían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) elegiría
(tú) elegirías
(él/ella/usted) elegiría
(nosotros/as) elegiríamos
(vosotros/as) elegiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) elegirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

elegido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Nosotros no **elegimos** a nuestros padres, ni ellos nos **eligen** a nosotros.* We don't choose our parents and neither do they choose us.

*Creo que **ha elegido** bien.* I think he's made a good choice.
*No lo **eligieron** ellos.* It wasn't them who chose it.

▶ **empezar** (to begin)

PRESENT

(yo) empiezo
(tú) empiezas
(él/ella/usted) empieza
(nosotros/as) empezamos
(vosotros/as) empezáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) empiezan

PRETERITE

(yo) empecé
(tú) empezaste
(él/ella/usted) empezó
(nosotros/as) empezamos
(vosotros/as) empezasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) empezaron

FUTURE

(yo) empezaré
(tú) empezarás
(él/ella/usted) empezará
(nosotros/as) empezaremos
(vosotros/as) empezaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) empezarán

IMPERATIVE

empieza / empezad

GERUND

empezando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) empiece
(tú) empieces
(él/ella/usted) empiece
(nosotros/as) empecemos
(vosotros/as) empecéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) empiecen

IMPERFECT

(yo) empezaba
(tú) empezabas
(él/ella/usted) empezaba
(nosotros/as) empezábamos
(vosotros/as) empezabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) empezaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) empezaría
(tú) empezarías
(él/ella/usted) empezaría
(nosotros/as) empezaríamos
(vosotros/as) empezaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) empezarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

empezado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Empieza por aquí. Start here.

¿Cuándo empiezas a trabajar en el sitio nuevo? When do you start work at the new place?

La semana que viene empezaremos un curso nuevo. We'll start a new course next week.

► entender (to understand)

PRESENT

(yo) entiendo
(tú) entiendes
(él/ella/usted) entiende
(nosotros/as) entendemos
(vosotros/as) entendéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) entienden

PRETERITE

(yo) entendí
(tú) entendiste
(él/ella/usted) entendió
(nosotros/as) entendimos
(vosotros/as) entendisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) entendieron

FUTURE

(yo) entenderé
(tú) entenderás
(él/ella/usted) entenderá
(nosotros/as) entenderemos
(vosotros/as) entenderéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) entenderán

IMPERATIVE

entiende / entended

GERUND

entendiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) entienda
(tú) entiendas
(él/ella/usted) entienda
(nosotros/as) entendamos
(vosotros/as) entendáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) entiendan

IMPERFECT

(yo) entendía
(tú) entendías
(él/ella/usted) entendía
(nosotros/as) entendíamos
(vosotros/as) entendíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) entendían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) entendería
(tú) entenderías
(él/ella/usted) entendería
(nosotros/as) entenderíamos
(vosotros/as) entenderíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) entenderían

PAST PARTICIPLE

entendido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No lo **entiendo**.* I don't understand.

*¿**Entendiste** lo que dijo?* Did you understand what she said?

*Con el tiempo lo **entenderás**.* You'll understand one day.

► enviar (to send)

PRESENT

(yo) envió
(tú) envías
(él/ella/usted) envía
(nosotros/as) enviamos
(vosotros/as) enviáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) envían

PRETERITE

(yo) envié
(tú) enviaste
(él/ella/usted) envió
(nosotros/as) enviamos
(vosotros/as) enviasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) enviaron

FUTURE

(yo) enviaré
(tú) enviarás
(él/ella/usted) enviará
(nosotros/as) enviaremos
(vosotros/as) enviaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) enviarán

IMPERATIVE

envía / enviad

GERUND

enviando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) envíe
(tú) envíes
(él/ella/usted) envíe
(nosotros/as) enviemos
(vosotros/as) enviéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) envíen

IMPERFECT

(yo) enviaba
(tú) enviabas
(él/ella/usted) enviaba
(nosotros/as) enviábamos
(vosotros/as) enviabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) enviaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) enviaría
(tú) enviarías
(él/ella/usted) enviaría
(nosotros/as) enviaríamos
(vosotros/as) enviaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) enviarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

enviado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Envíe todos sus datos personales. Send all your personal details.

*La han **enviado** a Guatemala.* They've sent her to Guatemala.
*Nos **enviarán** más información.* They'll send us further information.

► **erguir** (to erect)

PRESENT

(yo) ergo
(tú) yergues
(él/ella/usted) yergue
(nosotros/as) erguimos
(vosotros/as) erguís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) yerguen

PRETERITE

(yo) erguí
(tú) erguiste
(él/ella/usted) irguió
(nosotros/as) erguimos
(vosotros/as) erguisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) irguieron

FUTURE

(yo) erguiré
(tú) erguirás
(él/ella/usted) erguirá
(nosotros/as) erguiremos
(vosotros/as) erguiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) erguirán

IMPERATIVE

yergue / erguid

GERUND

irguiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) yerga
(tú) yergas
(él/ella/usted) yerga
(nosotros/as) irgamos
(vosotros/as) irgáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) yergan

IMPERFECT

(yo) erguía
(tú) erguías
(él/ella/usted) erguía
(nosotros/as) erguíamos
(vosotros/as) erguiais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) erguían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) erguiría
(tú) erguirías
(él/ella/usted) erguiría
(nosotros/as) erguiríamos
(vosotros/as) erguiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) erguirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

erguido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Irguió la cabeza con orgullo. She lifted her head up proudly.
El rascacielos se erguía sobre la ciudad. The skyscraper towered over the city.

Erguirán dos nuevas torres en el centro. They're going to put up two new tower blocks in the centre.

▶ **errar** (to err)

PRESENT

(yo) yerro
(tú) yerras
(él/ella/usted) yerra
(nosotros/as) erramos
(vosotros/as) erráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) yerran

PRETERITE

(yo) erré
(tú) erraste
(él/ella/usted) erró
(nosotros/as) erramos
(vosotros/as) errasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) erraron

FUTURE

(yo) erraré
(tú) errarás
(él/ella/usted) errará
(nosotros/as) erraremos
(vosotros/as) erraréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) errarán

IMPERATIVE

yerra / errad

GERUND

errando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) yerre
(tú) yerres
(él/ella/usted) yerre
(nosotros/as) erremos
(vosotros/as) erréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) yerren

IMPERFECT

(yo) erraba
(tú) errabas
(él/ella/usted) erraba
(nosotros/as) errábamos
(vosotros/as) errabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) erraban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) erraría
(tú) errarías
(él/ella/usted) erraría
(nosotros/as) erraríamos
(vosotros/as) erraríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) errarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

errado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Erró todas las preguntas. He got all the questions wrong.

Erró el tiro. He missed the shot.

Ha errado el camino. He's lost his way.

► escribir (to write)

PRESENT

(yo) escribo
(tú) escribes
(él/ella/usted) escribe
(nosotros/as) escribimos
(vosotros/as) escribís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) escriben

PRETERITE

(yo) escribí
(tú) escribiste
(él/ella/usted) escribió
(nosotros/as) escribimos
(vosotros/as) escribisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) escribieron

FUTURE

(yo) escribiré
(tú) escribirás
(él/ella/usted) escribirá
(nosotros/as) escribiremos
(vosotros/as) escribiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) escribirán

IMPERATIVE

escribe / escribid

GERUND

escribiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) escriba
(tú) escribas
(él/ella/usted) escriba
(nosotros/as) escribamos
(vosotros/as) escribáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) escriban

IMPERFECT

(yo) escribía
(tú) escribías
(él/ella/usted) escribía
(nosotros/as) escribíamos
(vosotros/as) escribíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) escribían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) escribiría
(tú) escribirías
(él/ella/usted) escribiría
(nosotros/as) escribiríamos
(vosotros/as) escribiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) escribirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

escrito

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Eso lo he escrito yo. I've written that.

Escríbelo en la pizarra. Write it on the blackboard.

Nos escribimos durante un tiempo. We wrote to each other for a while.

► **estar** (to be)

PRESENT

(yo) estoy
(tú) estás
(él/ella/usted) está
(nosotros/as) estamos
(vosotros/as) estáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) están

PRETERITE

(yo) estuve
(tú) estuviste
(él/ella/usted) estuvo
(nosotros/as) estuvimos
(vosotros/as) estuvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) estuvieron

FUTURE

(yo) estaré
(tú) estarás
(él/ella/usted) estará
(nosotros/as) estaremos
(vosotros/as) estaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) estarán

IMPERATIVE

está / estad

GERUND

estando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) esté
(tú) estés
(él/ella/usted) esté
(nosotros/as) estemos
(vosotros/as) estéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) estén

IMPERFECT

(yo) estaba
(tú) estabas
(él/ella/usted) estaba
(nosotros/as) estábamos
(vosotros/as) estabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) estaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) estaría
(tú) estarías
(él/ella/usted) estaría
(nosotros/as) estaríamos
(vosotros/as) estaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) estarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

estado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Estoy cansado. I'm tired.

Estuvimos en casa de mis padres. We went to my parents.

¿A qué hora estarás en casa? What time will you be home?

► freír (to fry)

PRESENT

(yo) frío
(tú) fríes
(él/ella/usted) fríe
(nosotros/as) freímos
(vosotros/as) fréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) fríen

PRETERITE

(yo) freí
(tú) freíste
(él/ella/usted) frió
(nosotros/as) freímos
(vosotros/as) freísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) frieron

FUTURE

(yo) freiré
(tú) freirás
(él/ella/usted) freirá
(nosotros/as) freiremos
(vosotros/as) freiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) freirán

IMPERATIVE

fríe / freíd

GERUND

friendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) fría
(tú) frías
(él/ella/usted) fría
(nosotros/as) friamos
(vosotros/as) friáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) frián

IMPERFECT

(yo) freía
(tú) freías
(él/ella/usted) freía
(nosotros/as) freíamos
(vosotros/as) freíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) freían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) freiría
(tú) freirías
(él/ella/usted) freiría
(nosotros/as) freiríamos
(vosotros/as) freiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) freirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

frito

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Fríelo en esta sartén. Fry it in this pan.

He frito el pescado. I've fried the fish.

Nos freíamos de calor. We were roasting in the heat.

► gruñir (to grunt)

PRESENT

(yo) gruño
(tú) gruñes
(él/ella/usted) gruñe
(nosotros/as) gruñimos
(vosotros/as) gruñís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñen

PRETERITE

(yo) gruñí
(tú) gruñiste
(él/ella/usted) gruñó
(nosotros/as) gruñimos
(vosotros/as) gruñisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñeron

FUTURE

(yo) gruñiré
(tú) gruñirás
(él/ella/usted) gruñirá
(nosotros/as) gruñiremos
(vosotros/as) gruñiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñirán

IMPERATIVE

gruñe / gruñid

GERUND

gruñendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) gruña
(tú) gruñas
(él/ella/usted) gruña
(nosotros/as) gruñamos
(vosotros/as) gruñáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñan

IMPERFECT

(yo) gruñía
(tú) gruñías
(él/ella/usted) gruñía
(nosotros/as) gruñíamos
(vosotros/as) gruñíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) gruñiría
(tú) gruñirías
(él/ella/usted) gruñiría
(nosotros/as) gruñiríamos
(vosotros/as) gruñiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

gruñido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Siempre **está gruñendo**.* He's always grumbling.

¡No gruñas!. Don't grumble!

*No creo que el oso nos **gruñ**a.* I don't think the bear will growl at us.

► haber (to have (auxiliary))

PRESENT

(yo) he
(tú) has
(él/ella/usted) ha
(nosotros/as) hemos
(vosotros/as) habéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) han

PRETERITE

(yo) hube
(tú) hubiste
(él/ella/usted) hubo
(nosotros/as) hubimos
(vosotros/as) hubisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hubieron

FUTURE

(yo) habré
(tú) habrás
(él/ella/usted) habrá
(nosotros/as) habremos
(vosotros/as) habréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) habrán

IMPERATIVE

not used

GERUND

habiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) haya
(tú) hayas
(él/ella/usted) haya
(nosotros/as) hayamos
(vosotros/as) hayáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hayan

IMPERFECT

(yo) había
(tú) habías
(él/ella/usted) había
(nosotros/as) habíamos
(vosotros/as) habíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) habían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) habría
(tú) habrías
(él/ella/usted) habría
(nosotros/as) habríamos
(vosotros/as) habríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) habrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

habido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Has visto eso? Did you see that?

Ya hemos ido a ver esa película. We've already been to see that film.

Eso nunca había pasado antes. That had never happened before.

▶ hablar (to speak, to talk)

PRESENT

(yo) hablo
(tú) hablas
(él/ella/usted) habla
(nosotros/as) hablamos
(vosotros/as) habláis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hablan

PRETERITE

(yo) hablé
(tú) hablaste
(él/ella/usted) habló
(nosotros/as) hablamos
(vosotros/as) hablasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hablaron

FUTURE

(yo) hablaré
(tú) hablarás
(él/ella/usted) hablará
(nosotros/as) hablaremos
(vosotros/as) hablaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hablarán

IMPERATIVE

habla / hablad

GERUND

hablando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) hable
(tú) hables
(él/ella/usted) hable
(nosotros/as) hablemos
(vosotros/as) habléis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hablen

IMPERFECT

(yo) hablaba
(tú) hablabas
(él/ella/usted) hablaba
(nosotros/as) hablábamos
(vosotros/as) hablabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hablaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) hablaría
(tú) hablarías
(él/ella/usted) hablaría
(nosotros/as) hablaríamos
(vosotros/as) hablaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hablarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

hablado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Hoy he hablado con mi hermana. I've spoken to my sister today.

No hables tan alto. Don't talk so loud.

No se hablan. They don't talk to each other.

► **hacer** (to do, to make)

PRESENT

(yo) hago
(tú) haces
(él/ella/usted) hace
(nosotros/as) hacemos
(vosotros/as) hacéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hacen

PRETERITE

(yo) hice
(tú) hiciste
(él/ella/usted) hizo
(nosotros/as) hicimos
(vosotros/as) hicisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hicieron

FUTURE

(yo) haré
(tú) harás
(él/ella/usted) hará
(nosotros/as) haremos
(vosotros/as) haréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) harán

IMPERATIVE

haz / haced

GERUND

haciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) haga
(tú) hagas
(él/ella/usted) haga
(nosotros/as) hagamos
(vosotros/as) hagáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hagan

IMPERFECT

(yo) hacía
(tú) hacías
(él/ella/usted) hacía
(nosotros/as) hacíamos
(vosotros/as) hacíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) hacían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) haría
(tú) harías
(él/ella/usted) haría
(nosotros/as) haríamos
(vosotros/as) haríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) harían

PAST PARTICIPLE

hecho

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Lo **haré** yo mismo.* I'll do it myself.

*¿Quién **hizo** eso?* Who did that?

*Quieres que **haga** las camas?* Do you want me to make the beds?

► **hay** (there is, there are)

PRESENT

hay

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

haya

PRETERITE

hubo

IMPERFECT

había

FUTURE

habrá

CONDITIONAL

habría

IMPERATIVE

not used

PAST PARTICIPLE

habido

GERUND

habiendo

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Hay más galletas? Are there any biscuits left?

No había nadie. There wasn't anybody there.

El domingo habrá una manifestación. There will be a demonstration on Sunday.

► **ir** (to go)

PRESENT

(yo) voy
(tú) vas
(él/ella/usted) va
(nosotros/as) vamos
(vosotros/as) vais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) van

PRETERITE

(yo) fui
(tú) fuiste
(él/ella/usted) fue
(nosotros/as) fuimos
(vosotros/as) fuisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) fueron

FUTURE

(yo) iré
(tú) irás
(él/ella/usted) irá
(nosotros/as) iremos
(vosotros/as) iréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) irán

IMPERATIVE

ve / id

GERUND

yendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) vaya
(tú) vayas
(él/ella/usted) vaya
(nosotros/as) vayamos
(vosotros/as) vayáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vayan

IMPERFECT

(yo) iba
(tú) ibas
(él/ella/usted) iba
(nosotros/as) íbamos
(vosotros/as) ibais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) iban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) iría
(tú) irías
(él/ella/usted) iría
(nosotros/as) iríamos
(vosotros/as) iríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) irían

PAST PARTICIPLE

ido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Vamos a comer al campo? Shall we have a picnic in the country?

El domingo iré a Edimburgo. I'll go to Edinburgh on Sunday.

Yo no voy con ellos. I'm not going with them.

▶ jugar (to play)

PRESENT

(yo) juego
(tú) juegas
(él/ella/usted) juega
(nosotros/as) jugamos
(vosotros/as) jugáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) juegan

PRETERITE

(yo) jugué
(tú) jugaste
(él/ella/usted) jugó
(nosotros/as) jugamos
(vosotros/as) jugasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) jugaron

FUTURE

(yo) jugaré
(tú) jugarás
(él/ella/usted) jugará
(nosotros/as) jugaremos
(vosotros/as) jugaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) jugarán

IMPERATIVE

juega / jugad

GERUND

jugando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) juegue
(tú) juegues
(él/ella/usted) juegue
(nosotros/as) juguemos
(vosotros/as) juguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) jueguen

IMPERFECT

(yo) jugaba
(tú) jugabas
(él/ella/usted) jugaba
(nosotros/as) jugábamos
(vosotros/as) jugabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) jugaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) jugaría
(tú) jugarías
(él/ella/usted) jugaría
(nosotros/as) jugaríamos
(vosotros/as) jugaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) jugarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

jugado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Juego al fútbol todos los domingos. I play football every Sunday.

Están jugando en el jardín. They're playing in the garden.

Jugarán contra el Real Madrid. They'll play Real Madrid.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ leer (to read)

PRESENT

(yo) leo
(tú) lees
(él/ella/usted) lee
(nosotros/as) leemos
(vosotros/as) leéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) leen

PRETERITE

(yo) leí
(tú) leíste
(él/ella/usted) leyó
(nosotros/as) leímos
(vosotros/as) leísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) leyeron

FUTURE

(yo) leeré
(tú) leerás
(él/ella/usted) leerá
(nosotros/as) leeremos
(vosotros/as) leeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) leerán

IMPERATIVE

lee / leed

GERUND

leyendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) lea
(tú) leas
(él/ella/usted) lea
(nosotros/as) leamos
(vosotros/as) leáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) lean

IMPERFECT

(yo) leía
(tú) leías
(él/ella/usted) leía
(nosotros/as) leíamos
(vosotros/as) leíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) leían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) leería
(tú) leerías
(él/ella/usted) leería
(nosotros/as) leeríamos
(vosotros/as) leeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) leerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

leído

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Hace mucho tiempo que no leo. I haven't read anything for ages.

¿Has leído esta novela? Have you read this novel?

Lo leí hace tiempo. I read it a while ago.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ llover (to rain)

PRESENT

llueve

PRETERITE

llovió

FUTURE

lloverá

IMPERATIVE

not used

GERUND

lloviendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

llueva

IMPERFECT

llovía

CONDITIONAL

llovería

PAST PARTICIPLE

llovido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Está lloviendo. It's raining.

Llovió sin parar. It rained non-stop.

Hace semanas que no llueve. It hasn't rained for weeks.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **lucir** (to shine)

PRESENT

(yo) luzco
(tú) luces
(él/ella/usted) luce
(nosotros/as) lucimos
(vosotros/as) lucís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) lucen

PRETERITE

(yo) lucí
(tú) luciste
(él/ella/usted) lució
(nosotros/as) lucimos
(vosotros/as) lucisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) lucieron

FUTURE

(yo) luciré
(tú) lucirás
(él/ella/usted) lucirá
(nosotros/as) luciremos
(vosotros/as) luciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) lucirán

IMPERATIVE

luce / lucid

GERUND

luciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) luzca
(tú) luzcas
(él/ella/usted) luzca
(nosotros/as) luzcamos
(vosotros/as) luzcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) luzcan

IMPERFECT

(yo) lucía
(tú) lucías
(él/ella/usted) lucía
(nosotros/as) lucíamos
(vosotros/as) lucíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) lucían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) luciría
(tú) lucirías
(él/ella/usted) luciría
(nosotros/as) luciríamos
(vosotros/as) luciríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) lucirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

lucido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Lucirá un traje muy elegante. She will be wearing a very smart dress.

Se lució en el examen. He excelled in the exam.

Lucían las estrellas. The stars were shining.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► morir (to die)

PRESENT

(yo) muero
(tú) mueres
(él/ella/usted) muere
(nosotros/as) morimos
(vosotros/as) morís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) mueren

PRETERITE

(yo) morí
(tú) moriste
(él/ella/usted) murió
(nosotros/as) morimos
(vosotros/as) moristeis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) murieron

FUTURE

(yo) moriré
(tú) morirás
(él/ella/usted) morirá
(nosotros/as) moriremos
(vosotros/as) moriréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) morirán

IMPERATIVE

muere / morid

GERUND

muriendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) muera
(tú) mueras
(él/ella/usted) muera
(nosotros/as) muramos
(vosotros/as) muráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) mueran

IMPERFECT

(yo) moría
(tú) morías
(él/ella/usted) moría
(nosotros/as) moríamos
(vosotros/as) moríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) morían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) moriría
(tú) morirías
(él/ella/usted) moriría
(nosotros/as) moriríamos
(vosotros/as) moriríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) morirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

muerto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Murió a las cinco de la madrugada. He died at five in the morning.

Cuando me muera... When I die...

Se le ha muerto el gato. His cat has died.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► mover (to move)

PRESENT

(yo) muevo
(tú) mueves
(él/ella/usted) mueve
(nosotros/as) movemos
(vosotros/as) movéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) mueven

PRETERITE

(yo) moví
(tú) moviste
(él/ella/usted) movió
(nosotros/as) movimos
(vosotros/as) movisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) movieron

FUTURE

(yo) moveré
(tú) moverás
(él/ella/usted) moverá
(nosotros/as) moveremos
(vosotros/as) moveréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) moverán

IMPERATIVE

mueve /moved

GERUND

moviendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) mueva
(tú) muevas
(él/ella/usted) mueva
(nosotros/as) movamos
(vosotros/as) mováis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) muevan

IMPERFECT

(yo) movía
(tú) movías
(él/ella/usted) movía
(nosotros/as) movíamos
(vosotros/as) movíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) movían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) movería
(tú) moverías
(él/ella/usted) movería
(nosotros/as) moveríamos
(vosotros/as) moveríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) moverían

PAST PARTICIPLE

movido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Mueve la mesa hacia la derecha. Move the table over to the right.

Se está moviendo. It's moving.

No se movieron de casa. They didn't leave the house.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **nacer** (to be born)

PRESENT

(yo) nazco
(tú) naces
(él/ella/usted) nace
(nosotros/as) nacemos
(vosotros/as) nacéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) nacen

PRETERITE

(yo) nací
(tú) naciste
(él/ella/usted) nació
(nosotros/as) nacimos
(vosotros/as) nacisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) nacieron

FUTURE

(yo) naceré
(tú) nacerás
(él/ella/usted) nacerá
(nosotros/as) naceremos
(vosotros/as) naceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) nacerán

IMPERATIVE

nace/ naced

GERUND

naciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) nazca
(tú) nazcas
(él/ella/usted) nazca
(nosotros/as) nazcamos
(vosotros/as) nazcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) nazcan

IMPERFECT

(yo) nacía
(tú) nacías
(él/ella/usted) nacía
(nosotros/as) nacíamos
(vosotros/as) nacíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) nacían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) nacería
(tú) nacerías
(él/ella/usted) nacería
(nosotros/as) naceríamos
(vosotros/as) naceríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) nacerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

nacido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Nació en 1967. He was born in 1967.

Nacerá el año que viene. It will be born next year.

¿Cuándo naciste? When were you born?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **negar** (to deny)

PRESENT

(yo) niego
(tú) niegas
(él/ella/usted) niega
(nosotros/as) negamos
(vosotros/as) negáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) niegan

PRETERITE

(yo) negué
(tú) negaste
(él/ella/usted) negó
(nosotros/as) negamos
(vosotros/as) negasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) negaron

FUTURE

(yo) negaré
(tú) negarás
(él/ella/usted) negará
(nosotros/as) negaremos
(vosotros/as) negaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) negarán

IMPERATIVE

niega/ negad

GERUND

negando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) niegue
(tú) niegues
(él/ella/usted) niegue
(nosotros/as) neguemos
(vosotros/as) neguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) nieguen

IMPERFECT

(yo) negaba
(tú) negabas
(él/ella/usted) negaba
(nosotros/as) negábamos
(vosotros/as) negabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) negaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) negaría
(tú) negarías
(él/ella/usted) negaría
(nosotros/as) negaríamos
(vosotros/as) negaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) negarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

negado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No lo **niegues**.* Don't deny it.

*Se **negó** a venir con nosotros.* She refused to come with us.

*No me **negarás** que es barato.* You can't say it's not cheap.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► Oír (to hear)

PRESENT

(yo) oigo
(tú) oyes
(él/ella/usted) oye
(nosotros/as) oímos
(vosotros/as) oís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) oyen

PRETERITE

(yo) oí
(tú) oíste
(él/ella/usted) oyó
(nosotros/as) oímos
(vosotros/as) oísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) oyeron

FUTURE

(yo) oiré
(tú) oirás
(él/ella/usted) oirá
(nosotros/as) oiremos
(vosotros/as) oiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) oirán

IMPERATIVE

oye/ oíd

GERUND

oyendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) oiga
(tú) oigas
(él/ella/usted) oiga
(nosotros/as) oigamos
(vosotros/as) oigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) oigan

IMPERFECT

(yo) oía
(tú) oías
(él/ella/usted) oía
(nosotros/as) oíamos
(vosotros/as) oíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) oían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) oiría
(tú) oirías
(él/ella/usted) oiría
(nosotros/as) oiríamos
(vosotros/as) oiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) oirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

oído

EXAMPLE PHRASES

No oigo nada. I can't hear anything.

Si no oyes bien, ve al médico. If you can't hear properly, go and see the doctor.

¿Has oído eso? Did you hear that?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ oler (to smell)

PRESENT

(yo) huelo
(tú) hueles
(él/ella/usted) huele
(nosotros/as) olemos
(vosotros/as) oléis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) huelen

PRETERITE

(yo) olí
(tú) oliste
(él/ella/usted) olió
(nosotros/as) olimos
(vosotros/as) olisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) olieron

FUTURE

(yo) oleré
(tú) olerás
(él/ella/usted) olerá
(nosotros/as) oleremos
(vosotros/as) oleréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) olerán

IMPERATIVE

huele/ oled

GERUND

oliendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) huela
(tú) huelas
(él/ella/usted) huela
(nosotros/as) olamos
(vosotros/as) oláis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) huelan

IMPERFECT

(yo) olía
(tú) olías
(él/ella/usted) olía
(nosotros/as) olíamos
(vosotros/as) olíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) olían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) olería
(tú) olerías
(él/ella/usted) olería
(nosotros/as) oleríamos
(vosotros/as) oleríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) olerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

olido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Huele a pescado. It smells of fish.

Olía muy bien. It smelled really nice.

Con esto ya no olerá. This will take the smell away.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ pagar (to pay)

PRESENT

(yo) pago
(tú) pagas
(él/ella/usted) paga
(nosotros/as) pagamos
(vosotros/as) pagáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pagan

PRETERITE

(yo) pagué
(tú) pagaste
(él/ella/usted) pagó
(nosotros/as) pagamos
(vosotros/as) pagasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pagaron

FUTURE

(yo) pagaré
(tú) pagarás
(él/ella/usted) pagará
(nosotros/as) pagaremos
(vosotros/as) pagaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pagarán

IMPERATIVE

paga/ pagad

GERUND

pagando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) pague
(tú) pagues
(él/ella/usted) pague
(nosotros/as) paguemos
(vosotros/as) paguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) paguen

IMPERFECT

(yo) pagaba
(tú) pagabas
(él/ella/usted) pagaba
(nosotros/as) pagábamos
(vosotros/as) pagabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pagaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) pagaría
(tú) pagarías
(él/ella/usted) pagaría
(nosotros/as) pagaríamos
(vosotros/as) pagaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pagarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

pagado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Cuánto te **pagan** al mes? How much do they pay you a month?

Lo **pagué** en efectivo. I paid for it in cash.

Yo te **pagaré** la entrada. I'll pay for your ticket.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► pedir (to ask for)

PRESENT

(yo) pido
(tú) pides
(él/ella/usted) pide
(nosotros/as) pedimos
(vosotros/as) pedís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) piden

PRETERITE

(yo) pedí
(tú) pediste
(él/ella/usted) pidió
(nosotros/as) pedimos
(vosotros/as) pedisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pidieron

FUTURE

(yo) pediré
(tú) pedirás
(él/ella/usted) pedirá
(nosotros/as) pediremos
(vosotros/as) pediréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pedirán

IMPERATIVE

pide/ pedid

GERUND

pidiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) pida
(tú) pidas
(él/ella/usted) pida
(nosotros/as) pidamos
(vosotros/as) pidáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pidan

IMPERFECT

(yo) pedía
(tú) pedías
(él/ella/usted) pedía
(nosotros/as) pedíamos
(vosotros/as) pedíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pedían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) pediría
(tú) pedirías
(él/ella/usted) pediría
(nosotros/as) pediríamos
(vosotros/as) pediríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pedirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

pedido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No nos **pidieron** el pasaporte.* They didn't ask us for our passports.

***Hemos pedido** dos cervezas.* We've ordered two beers.

***Pídele** el teléfono.* Ask her for her telephone number.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ pensar (to think)

PRESENT

(yo) pienso
(tú) piensas
(él/ella/usted) piensa
(nosotros/as) pensamos
(vosotros/as) pensáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) piensan

PRETERITE

(yo) pensé
(tú) pensaste
(él/ella/usted) pensó
(nosotros/as) pensamos
(vosotros/as) pensasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pensaron

FUTURE

(yo) pensaré
(tú) pensarás
(él/ella/usted) pensará
(nosotros/as) pensaremos
(vosotros/as) pensaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pensarán

IMPERATIVE

piensa/ pensad

GERUND

pensando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) piense
(tú) pienses
(él/ella/usted) piense
(nosotros/as) pensemos
(vosotros/as) penséis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) piensen

IMPERFECT

(yo) pensaba
(tú) pensabas
(él/ella/usted) pensaba
(nosotros/as) pensábamos
(vosotros/as) pensabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pensaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) pensaría
(tú) pensarías
(él/ella/usted) pensaría
(nosotros/as) pensaríamos
(vosotros/as) pensaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pensarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

pensado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

No lo pienses más. Don't think about it any more.

Está pensando en comprarse un piso. He's thinking of buying a flat.

Pensaba que vendrías. I thought you'd come.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► poder (to be able)

PRESENT

(yo) puedo
(tú) puedes
(él/ella/usted) puede
(nosotros/as) podemos
(vosotros/as) podéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pueden

PRETERITE

(yo) pude
(tú) pudiste
(él/ella/usted) pudo
(nosotros/as) pudimos
(vosotros/as) pudisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pudieron

FUTURE

(yo) podré
(tú) podrás
(él/ella/usted) podrá
(nosotros/as) podremos
(vosotros/as) podréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) podrán

IMPERATIVE

puede/ poded

GERUND

pudiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) pueda
(tú) puedas
(él/ella/usted) pueda
(nosotros/as) podamos
(vosotros/as) podáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) puedan

IMPERFECT

(yo) podía
(tú) podías
(él/ella/usted) podía
(nosotros/as) podíamos
(vosotros/as) podíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) podían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) podría
(tú) podrías
(él/ella/usted) podría
(nosotros/as) podríamos
(vosotros/as) podríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) podrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

podido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Puedo entrar? Can I come in?

Puedes venir cuando quieras. You can come when you like.

¿Podrías ayudarme? Could you help me?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► poner (to put)

PRESENT

(yo) pongo
(tú) pones
(él/ella/usted) pone
(nosotros/as) ponemos
(vosotros/as) ponéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) ponen

PRETERITE

(yo) puse
(tú) pusiste
(él/ella/usted) puso
(nosotros/as) pusimos
(vosotros/as) pusisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pusieron

FUTURE

(yo) pondré
(tú) pondrás
(él/ella/usted) pondrá
(nosotros/as) pondremos
(vosotros/as) pondréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pondrán

IMPERATIVE

pon/ poned

GERUND

poniendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) ponga
(tú) pongas
(él/ella/usted) ponga
(nosotros/as) pongamos
(vosotros/as) pongáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pongan

IMPERFECT

(yo) ponía
(tú) ponías
(él/ella/usted) ponía
(nosotros/as) poníamos
(vosotros/as) poníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) ponían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) pondría
(tú) pondrías
(él/ella/usted) pondría
(nosotros/as) pondríamos
(vosotros/as) pondríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) pondrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

puesto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Ponlo ahí encima. Put it on there.

Lo pondré aquí. I'll put it here.

Todos nos pusimos de acuerdo. We all agreed.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► prohibir (to forbid)

PRESENT

(yo) prohíbo
(tú) prohibes
(él/ella/usted) prohíbe
(nosotros/as) prohibimos
(vosotros/as) prohibís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) prohíben

PRETERITE

(yo) prohibí
(tú) prohibiste
(él/ella/usted) prohibió
(nosotros/as) prohibimos
(vosotros/as) prohibisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) prohibieron

FUTURE

(yo) prohibiré
(tú) prohibirás
(él/ella/usted) prohibirá
(nosotros/as) prohibiremos
(vosotros/as) prohibiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) prohibirán

IMPERATIVE

prohíbe/ prohibid

GERUND

prohibiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) prohíba
(tú) prohíbas
(él/ella/usted) prohíba
(nosotros/as) prohibamos
(vosotros/as) prohibáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) prohíban

IMPERFECT

(yo) prohibía
(tú) prohibías
(él/ella/usted) prohibía
(nosotros/as) prohibíamos
(vosotros/as) prohibíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) prohibían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) prohibiría
(tú) prohibirías
(él/ella/usted) prohibiría
(nosotros/as) prohibiríamos
(vosotros/as) prohibiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) prohibirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

prohibido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Le prohibieron la entrada en el bingo. She was not allowed into the bingo hall.

Han prohibido el acceso a la prensa. The press have been banned.

Te prohíbo que me hables así. I won't have you talking to me like that!

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **querer** (to want)

PRESENT

(yo) quiero
(tú) quieres
(él/ella/usted) quiere
(nosotros/as) queremos
(vosotros/as) queréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) quieren

PRETERITE

(yo) quise
(tú) quisiste
(él/ella/usted) quiso
(nosotros/as) quisimos
(vosotros/as) quisisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) quisieron

FUTURE

(yo) querré
(tú) querrás
(él/ella/usted) querrá
(nosotros/as) querremos
(vosotros/as) querréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) querrán

IMPERATIVE

quiere/ quered

GERUND

queriendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) quiera
(tú) quieras
(él/ella/usted) quiera
(nosotros/as) queramos
(vosotros/as) queráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) quieran

IMPERFECT

(yo) quería
(tú) querías
(él/ella/usted) quería
(nosotros/as) queríamos
(vosotros/as) queríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) querían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) querría
(tú) querrías
(él/ella/usted) querría
(nosotros/as) querríamos
(vosotros/as) querríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) querrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

querido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Te **quiero**.* I love you.

***Quisiera** preguntar una cosa.* I'd like to ask something.

*No **quería** decírmelo.* She didn't want to tell me.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► rehusar (to refuse)

PRESENT

(yo) rehúso
(tú) rehúsas
(él/ella/usted) rehúsa
(nosotros/as) rehusamos
(vosotros/as) rehusáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rehúsan

PRETERITE

(yo) rehusé
(tú) rehusaste
(él/ella/usted) rehusó
(nosotros/as) rehusamos
(vosotros/as) rehusasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rehusaron

FUTURE

(yo) rehusaré
(tú) rehusarás
(él/ella/usted) rehusará
(nosotros/as) rehusaremos
(vosotros/as) rehusaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rehusarán

IMPERATIVE

rehúsa /rehusad

GERUND

rehusando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) rehúse
(tú) rehúses
(él/ella/usted) rehúse
(nosotros/as) rehusemos
(vosotros/as) rehuséis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rehúsen

IMPERFECT

(yo) rehusaba
(tú) rehusabas
(él/ella/usted) rehusaba
(nosotros/as) rehusábamos
(vosotros/as) rehusabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rehusaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) rehusaría
(tú) rehusarías
(él/ella/usted) rehusaría
(nosotros/as) rehusaríamos
(vosotros/as) rehusaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rehusarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

rehusado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Rehusó hacer declaraciones. He declined to make a statement.

Ha rehusado el premio. He's turned down the award.

Le **rehusaron** la posibilidad de reclamar. She was denied the possibility of appealing.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► reír (to laugh)

PRESENT

(yo) río
(tú) ríes
(él/ella/usted) ríe
(nosotros/as) reímos
(vosotros/as) reís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) ríen

PRETERITE

(yo) reí
(tú) reíste
(él/ella/usted) rio
(nosotros/as) reímos
(vosotros/as) reísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rieron

FUTURE

(yo) reiré
(tú) reirás
(él/ella/usted) reirá
(nosotros/as) reiremos
(vosotros/as) reiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reirán

IMPERATIVE

ríe/ reíd

GERUND

riendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) ría
(tú) rías
(él/ella/usted) ría
(nosotros/as) riamos
(vosotros/as) ríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rían

IMPERFECT

(yo) reía
(tú) reías
(él/ella/usted) reía
(nosotros/as) reíamos
(vosotros/as) reíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) reiría
(tú) reirías
(él/ella/usted) reiría
(nosotros/as) reiríamos
(vosotros/as) reiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

reído

EXAMPLE PHRASES

No te rías de mí. Don't laugh at me.

Si ríes mucho te saldrán arrugas. If you laugh too much, you'll get lines.

Se ríe de cualquier cosa. She laughs at anything.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► reñir (to scold)

PRESENT

(yo) riño
(tú) riñes
(él/ella/usted) riñe
(nosotros/as) reñimos
(vosotros/as) reñís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) riñen

PRETERITE

(yo) reñí
(tú) reñiste
(él/ella/usted) riñó
(nosotros/as) reñimos
(vosotros/as) reñisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) riñeron

FUTURE

(yo) reñiré
(tú) reñirás
(él/ella/usted) reñirá
(nosotros/as) reñiremos
(vosotros/as) reñiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reñirán

IMPERATIVE

riñe/ reñid

GERUND

riñendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) riña
(tú) riñas
(él/ella/usted) riña
(nosotros/as) riñamos
(vosotros/as) riñáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) riñan

IMPERFECT

(yo) reñía
(tú) reñías
(él/ella/usted) reñía
(nosotros/as) reñíamos
(vosotros/as) reñíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reñían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) reñiría
(tú) reñirías
(él/ella/usted) reñiría
(nosotros/as) reñiríamos
(vosotros/as) reñiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reñirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

reñido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Les **riñó** por llegar tarde a casa. She told them off for getting home late.

Nos **reñía** sin motivo. She used to tell us off for no reason.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► resolver (to solve)

PRESENT

(yo) resuelvo
(tú) resuelves
(él/ella/usted) resuelve
(nosotros/as) resolvemos
(vosotros/as) resolvéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) resuelven

PRETERITE

(yo) resolví
(tú) resolviste
(él/ella/usted) resolvió
(nosotros/as) resolvimos
(vosotros/as) resolvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) resolvieron

FUTURE

(yo) resolveré
(tú) resolverás
(él/ella/usted) resolverá
(nosotros/as) resolveremos
(vosotros/as) resolveréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) resolverán

IMPERATIVE

resuelve/ resolved

GERUND

resolviendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) resuelva
(tú) resuelvas
(él/ella/usted) resuelva
(nosotros/as) resolvamos
(vosotros/as) resolváis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) resuelvan

IMPERFECT

(yo) resolvía
(tú) resolvías
(él/ella/usted) resolvía
(nosotros/as) resolvíamos
(vosotros/as) resolvíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) resolvían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) resolvería
(tú) resolverías
(él/ella/usted) resolvería
(nosotros/as) resolveríamos
(vosotros/as) resolveríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) resolverían

PAST PARTICIPLE

resuelto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Resolvimos el problema entre todos. We solved the problem together.

*No hemos **resuelto** los problemas.* We haven't solved the problems.

*Hasta que no lo **resuelva** no descansaré.* I won't rest until I've sorted it out.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► reunir (to put together, to gather)

PRESENT

(yo) reúno
(tú) reúnes
(él/ella/usted) reúne
(nosotros/as) reunimos
(vosotros/as) reunís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reúnen

PRETERITE

(yo) reuní
(tú) reuniste
(él/ella/usted) reunió
(nosotros/as) reunimos
(vosotros/as) reunisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reunieron

FUTURE

(yo) reuniré
(tú) reunirás
(él/ella/usted) reunirá
(nosotros/as) reuniremos
(vosotros/as) reuniréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reunirán

IMPERATIVE

reúne /reunid

GERUND

reuniendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) reúna
(tú) reúnas
(él/ella/usted) reúna
(nosotros/as) reunamos
(vosotros/as) reunáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reúnan

IMPERFECT

(yo) reunía
(tú) reunías
(él/ella/usted) reunía
(nosotros/as) reuníamos
(vosotros/as) reuníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reunían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) reuniría
(tú) reunirías
(él/ella/usted) reuniría
(nosotros/as) reuniríamos
(vosotros/as) reuniríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) reunirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

reunido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Han reunido suficientes pruebas. They have gathered enough evidence.

No reúne las condiciones necesarias. He doesn't meet the necessary requirements.

Se reunían una vez por semana. They used to meet once a week.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► rogar (to beg)

PRESENT

(yo) ruego
(tú) ruegas
(él/ella/usted) ruega
(nosotros/as) rogamos
(vosotros/as) rogáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) ruegan

PRETERITE

(yo) rogué
(tú) rogaste
(él/ella/usted) rogó
(nosotros/as) rogamos
(vosotros/as) rogasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rogaron

FUTURE

(yo) rogaré
(tú) rogarás
(él/ella/usted) rogará
(nosotros/as) rogarémos
(vosotros/as) rogaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rogarán

IMPERATIVE

ruega/ rogad

GERUND

rogando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) ruegue
(tú) ruegues
(él/ella/usted) ruegue
(nosotros/as) roguemos
(vosotros/as) roguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rueguen

IMPERFECT

(yo) rogaba
(tú) rogabas
(él/ella/usted) rogaba
(nosotros/as) rogábamos
(vosotros/as) rogabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rogaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) rogaría
(tú) rogarías
(él/ella/usted) rogaría
(nosotros/as) rogaríamos
(vosotros/as) rogaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rogarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

rogado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Te **ruego** que me lo devuelvas.* Please give it back to me.

*“Se **ruega** no fumar”* “No smoking”

*Les **rogamos** acepten nuestras disculpas.* Please accept our apologies.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► romper (to break)

PRESENT

(yo) rompo
(tú) rompes
(él/ella/usted) rompe
(nosotros/as) rompemos
(vosotros/as) rompéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rompen

PRETERITE

(yo) rompí
(tú) rompiste
(él/ella/usted) rompió
(nosotros/as) rompimos
(vosotros/as) rompisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rompieron

FUTURE

(yo) romperé
(tú) romperás
(él/ella/usted) romperá
(nosotros/as) romperemos
(vosotros/as) romperéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) romperán

IMPERATIVE

rompe/ romped

GERUND

rompiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) rompa
(tú) rompas
(él/ella/usted) rompa
(nosotros/as) rompamos
(vosotros/as) rompáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rompan

IMPERFECT

(yo) rompía
(tú) rompías
(él/ella/usted) rompía
(nosotros/as) rompíamos
(vosotros/as) rompíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) rompían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) rompería
(tú) romperías
(él/ella/usted) rompería
(nosotros/as) romperíamos
(vosotros/as) romperíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) romperían

PAST PARTICIPLE

roto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Siempre **están rompiendo** cosas.* They're always breaking things.

*Cuidado, no lo **rompas**.* Careful you don't break it.

*Se **rompió** el jarrón.* The vase broke.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ **saber** (to know)

PRESENT

(yo) sé
(tú) sabes
(él/ella/usted) sabe
(nosotros/as) sabemos
(vosotros/as) sabéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) saben

PRETERITE

(yo) supe
(tú) supiste
(él/ella/usted) supo
(nosotros/as) supimos
(vosotros/as) supisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) supieron

FUTURE

(yo) sabré
(tú) sabrás
(él/ella/usted) sabrá
(nosotros/as) sabremos
(vosotros/as) sabréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sabrán

IMPERATIVE

sabe/ sabed

GERUND

sabiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) sepa
(tú) sepas
(él/ella/usted) sepa
(nosotros/as) sepamos
(vosotros/as) sepáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sepan

IMPERFECT

(yo) sabía
(tú) sabías
(él/ella/usted) sabía
(nosotros/as) sabíamos
(vosotros/as) sabíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sabían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) sabría
(tú) sabrías
(él/ella/usted) sabría
(nosotros/as) sabríamos
(vosotros/as) sabríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sabrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

sabido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

No lo sé. I don't know.

¿Sabes una cosa? Do you know what?

Pensaba que lo sabías. I thought you knew.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► sacar (to take out)

PRESENT

(yo) saco
(tú) sacas
(él/ella/usted) saca
(nosotros/as) sacamos
(vosotros/as) sacáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sacan

PRETERITE

(yo) saqué
(tú) sacaste
(él/ella/usted) sacó
(nosotros/as) sacamos
(vosotros/as) sacasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sacaron

FUTURE

(yo) sacaré
(tú) sacarás
(él/ella/usted) sacará
(nosotros/as) sacaremos
(vosotros/as) sacaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sacarán

IMPERATIVE

saca/ sacad

GERUND

sacando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) saque
(tú) saques
(él/ella/usted) saque
(nosotros/as) saquemos
(vosotros/as) saqueis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) saquen

IMPERFECT

(yo) sacaba
(tú) sacabas
(él/ella/usted) sacaba
(nosotros/as) sacábamos
(vosotros/as) sacabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sacaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) sacaría
(tú) sacarías
(él/ella/usted) sacaría
(nosotros/as) sacaríamos
(vosotros/as) sacaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sacarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

sacado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Ya he sacado las entradas. I've already bought the tickets.

Saqué un 7 en el examen. I got a 7 in the exam.

No saques la cabeza por la ventanilla. Don't lean out of the window.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► salir (to go out)

PRESENT

(yo) salgo
(tú) sales
(él/ella/usted) sale
(nosotros/as) salimos
(vosotros/as) salís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) salen

PRETERITE

(yo) salí
(tú) saliste
(él/ella/usted) salió
(nosotros/as) salimos
(vosotros/as) salisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) salieron

FUTURE

(yo) saldré
(tú) saldrás
(él/ella/usted) saldrá
(nosotros/as) saldremos
(vosotros/as) saldréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) saldrán

IMPERATIVE

sal/ salid

GERUND

saliendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) salga
(tú) salgas
(él/ella/usted) salga
(nosotros/as) salgamos
(vosotros/as) salgáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) salgan

IMPERFECT

(yo) salía
(tú) salías
(él/ella/usted) salía
(nosotros/as) salíamos
(vosotros/as) salíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) salían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) saldría
(tú) saldrías
(él/ella/usted) saldría
(nosotros/as) saldríamos
(vosotros/as) saldríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) saldrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

salido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Hace tiempo que no **salimos**.* We haven't been out for a while.
*Por favor, **salgan** por la puerta de atrás.* Please leave via the back door.

***Salió** un par de veces con nosotros.* He went out with us a couple of times.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► satisfacer (to satisfy)

PRESENT

(yo) satisfago
(tú) satisfaces
(él/ella/usted) satisface
(nosotros/as) satisfacemos
(vosotros/as) satisfacéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) satisfacen

PRETERITE

(yo) satisfice
(tú) satisficiste
(él/ella/usted) satisfizo
(nosotros/as) satisficimos
(vosotros/as) satisficisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) satisficieron

FUTURE

(yo) satisfaré
(tú) satisfarás
(él/ella/usted) satisfará
(nosotros/as) satisfaremos
(vosotros/as) satisfaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) satisfarán

IMPERATIVE

satisfaz/ satisface/satisfied

GERUND

satisfaciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) satisfaga
(tú) satisfagas
(él/ella/usted) satisfaga
(nosotros/as) satisfagamos
(vosotros/as) satisfagáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) satisfagan

IMPERFECT

(yo) satisfacía
(tú) satisfacías
(él/ella/usted) satisfacía
(nosotros/as) satisfacíamos
(vosotros/as) satisfacíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) satisfacían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) satisfaría
(tú) satisfarías
(él/ella/usted) satisfaría
(nosotros/as) satisfaríamos
(vosotros/as) satisfaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) satisfarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

satisfecho

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No me **satisface** nada el resultado.* I'm not at all satisfied with the result.

*Eso **satisfizo** mi curiosidad.* That satisfied my curiosity.

*Ha **satisfecho** mis expectativas.* It came up to my expectations.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ seguir (to follow)

PRESENT

(yo) sigo
(tú) sigues
(él/ella/usted) sigue
(nosotros/as) seguimos
(vosotros/as) seguís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) siguen

PRETERITE

(yo) seguí
(tú) seguiste
(él/ella/usted) siguió
(nosotros/as) seguimos
(vosotros/as) seguisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) siguieron

FUTURE

(yo) seguiré
(tú) seguirás
(él/ella/usted) seguirá
(nosotros/as) seguiremos
(vosotros/as) seguiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) seguirán

IMPERATIVE

sigue/ seguid

GERUND

siguiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) siga
(tú) sigas
(él/ella/usted) siga
(nosotros/as) sigamos
(vosotros/as) sigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sigan

IMPERFECT

(yo) seguía
(tú) seguías
(él/ella/usted) seguía
(nosotros/as) seguíamos
(vosotros/as) seguíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) seguían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) seguiría
(tú) seguirías
(él/ella/usted) seguiría
(nosotros/as) seguiríamos
(vosotros/as) seguiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) seguirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

seguido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Siga por esta calle hasta el final. Carry on down to the end of the street.

Nos seguiremos viendo. We will go on seeing each other.

Nos siguió todo el camino. He followed us all the way.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► sentir (to feel)

PRESENT

(yo) siento
(tú) sientes
(él/ella/usted) siente
(nosotros/as) sentimos
(vosotros/as) sentís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sienten

PRETERITE

(yo) sentí
(tú) sentiste
(él/ella/usted) sintió
(nosotros/as) sentimos
(vosotros/as) sentisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sintieron

FUTURE

(yo) sentiré
(tú) sentirás
(él/ella/usted) sentirá
(nosotros/as) sentiremos
(vosotros/as) sentiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sentirán

IMPERATIVE

siente/ sentido

GERUND

sintiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) sienta
(tú) sientas
(él/ella/usted) sienta
(nosotros/as) sintamos
(vosotros/as) sintáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sientan

IMPERFECT

(yo) sentía
(tú) sentías
(él/ella/usted) sentía
(nosotros/as) sentíamos
(vosotros/as) sentíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sentían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) sentiría
(tú) sentirías
(él/ella/usted) sentiría
(nosotros/as) sentiríamos
(vosotros/as) sentiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sentirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

sentido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Siento mucho lo que pasó. I'm really sorry about what happened.

Sentí un pinchazo en la pierna. I felt a sharp pain in my leg.

No creo que lo sienta. I don't think she's sorry.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **ser** (to be)

PRESENT

(yo) soy
(tú) eres
(él/ella/usted) es
(nosotros/as) somos
(vosotros/as) sois
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) son

PRETERITE

(yo) fui
(tú) fuiste
(él/ella/usted) fue
(nosotros/as) fuimos
(vosotros/as) fuisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) fueron

FUTURE

(yo) seré
(tú) serás
(él/ella/usted) será
(nosotros/as) seremos
(vosotros/as) seréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) serán

IMPERATIVE

sé /sed

GERUND

siendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) sea
(tú) seas
(él/ella/usted) sea
(nosotros/as) seamos
(vosotros/as) seáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) sean

IMPERFECT

(yo) era
(tú) eras
(él/ella/usted) era
(nosotros/as) éramos
(vosotros/as) erais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) eran

CONDITIONAL

(yo) sería
(tú) serías
(él/ella/usted) sería
(nosotros/as) seríamos
(vosotros/as) seríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) serían

PAST PARTICIPLE

sido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Soy español. I'm Spanish.

¿Fuiste tú el que llamó? Was it you who phoned?

Era de noche. It was dark.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► tener (to have)

PRESENT

(yo) tengo
(tú) tienes
(él/ella/usted) tiene
(nosotros/as) tenemos
(vosotros/as) tenéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tienen

PRETERITE

(yo) tuve
(tú) tuviste
(él/ella/usted) tuvo
(nosotros/as) tuvimos
(vosotros/as) tuvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tuvieron

FUTURE

(yo) tendré
(tú) tendrás
(él/ella/usted) tendrá
(nosotros/as) tendremos
(vosotros/as) tendréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tendrán

IMPERATIVE

ten/ tened

GERUND

teniendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) tenga
(tú) tengas
(él/ella/usted) tenga
(nosotros/as) tengamos
(vosotros/as) tengáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tengan

IMPERFECT

(yo) tenía
(tú) tenías
(él/ella/usted) tenía
(nosotros/as) teníamos
(vosotros/as) teníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tenían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) tendría
(tú) tendrías
(él/ella/usted) tendría
(nosotros/as) tendríamos
(vosotros/as) tendríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tendrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

tenido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Tengo sed. I'm thirsty.

No tenía suficiente dinero. She didn't have enough money.

Tuvimos que irnos. We had to leave.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► torcer (to twist)

PRESENT

(yo) tuerzo
(tú) tuerces
(él/ella/usted) tuerce
(nosotros/as) torcemos
(vosotros/as) torcéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tuercen

PRETERITE

(yo) torcí
(tú) torciste
(él/ella/usted) torció
(nosotros/as) torcimos
(vosotros/as) torcisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) torcieron

FUTURE

(yo) torceré
(tú) torcerás
(él/ella/usted) torcerá
(nosotros/as) torceremos
(vosotros/as) torceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) torcerán

IMPERATIVE

tuerce/ torced

GERUND

torciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) tuerza
(tú) tuerzas
(él/ella/usted) tuerza
(nosotros/as) torzamos
(vosotros/as) torzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) tuerzan

IMPERFECT

(yo) torcía
(tú) torcías
(él/ella/usted) torcía
(nosotros/as) torcíamos
(vosotros/as) torcíaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) torcían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) torcería
(tú) torcerías
(él/ella/usted) torcería
(nosotros/as) torceríamos
(vosotros/as) torceríaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) torcerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

torcido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Se me torció el tobillo. I twisted my ankle.

Tuerza a la izquierda. Turn left.

Tuércelo un poco más. Twist it a little more.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► traer (to bring)

PRESENT

(yo) traigo
(tú) traes
(él/ella/usted) trae
(nosotros/as) traemos
(vosotros/as) traéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) traen

PRETERITE

(yo) traje
(tú) trajiste
(él/ella/usted) trajo
(nosotros/as) trajimos
(vosotros/as) trajisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) trajeron

FUTURE

(yo) traeré
(tú) traerás
(él/ella/usted) traerá
(nosotros/as) traeremos
(vosotros/as) traeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) traerán

IMPERATIVE

trae/ traed

GERUND

trayendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) traiga
(tú) traigas
(él/ella/usted) traiga
(nosotros/as) traigamos
(vosotros/as) traigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) traigan

IMPERFECT

(yo) traía
(tú) traías
(él/ella/usted) traía
(nosotros/as) traíamos
(vosotros/as) traíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) traían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) traería
(tú) traerías
(él/ella/usted) traería
(nosotros/as) traeríamos
(vosotros/as) traeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) traerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

traído

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Has traído lo que te pedí? Have you brought what I asked for?

No trajo el dinero. He didn't bring the money.

Trae eso. Give that here.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► valer (to be worth)

PRESENT

(yo) valgo
(tú) vales
(él/ella/usted) vale
(nosotros/as) valemos
(vosotros/as) valéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) valen

PRETERITE

(yo) valí
(tú) valiste
(él/ella/usted) valió
(nosotros/as) valimos
(vosotros/as) valisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) valieron

FUTURE

(yo) valdré
(tú) valdrás
(él/ella/usted) valdrá
(nosotros/as) valdremos
(vosotros/as) valdréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) valdrán

IMPERATIVE

vale/ valed

GERUND

valiendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) valga
(tú) valgas
(él/ella/usted) valga
(nosotros/as) valgamos
(vosotros/as) valgáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) valgan

IMPERFECT

(yo) valía
(tú) valías
(él/ella/usted) valía
(nosotros/as) valíamos
(vosotros/as) valíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) valían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) valdría
(tú) valdrías
(él/ella/usted) valdría
(nosotros/as) valdríamos
(vosotros/as) valdríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) valdrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

valido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿Cuánto **vale** eso? How much is that?

No **valía** la pena. It wasn't worth it.

Valga lo que **valga**, lo compro. I'll buy it, no matter how much it costs.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **vencer** (to win)

PRESENT

(yo) venzo
(tú) vences
(él/ella/usted) vence
(nosotros/as) vencemos
(vosotros/as) vencéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vencen

PRETERITE

(yo) vencí
(tú) venciste
(él/ella/usted) venció
(nosotros/as) vencimos
(vosotros/as) vencisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vencieron

FUTURE

(yo) venceré
(tú) vencerás
(él/ella/usted) vencerá
(nosotros/as) venceremos
(vosotros/as) venceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vencerán

IMPERATIVE

vence /venced

GERUND

venciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) venza
(tú) venzas
(él/ella/usted) venza
(nosotros/as) vencamos
(vosotros/as) vencáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) venzan

IMPERFECT

(yo) vencía
(tú) vencías
(él/ella/usted) vencía
(nosotros/as) vencíamos
(vosotros/as) vencíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vencían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) vencería
(tú) vencerías
(él/ella/usted) vencería
(nosotros/as) venceríamos
(vosotros/as) venceríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vencerían

PAST PARTICIPLE

vencido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*¿Quién crees que **vencerá** en las elecciones?* Who do you think will win the elections?

Han vencido tres veces fuera de casa. They've had three away wins.

Vencimos por dos a uno. We won two-one.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► venir (to come)

PRESENT

(yo) vengo
(tú) vienes
(él/ella/usted) viene
(nosotros/as) venimos
(vosotros/as) venís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vienen

PRETERITE

(yo) vine
(tú) viniste
(él/ella/usted) vino
(nosotros/as) vinimos
(vosotros/as) vinisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vinieron

FUTURE

(yo) vendré
(tú) vendrás
(él/ella/usted) vendrá
(nosotros/as) vendremos
(vosotros/as) vendréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vendrán

IMPERATIVE

ven/ venid

GERUND

viniendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) venga
(tú) vengas
(él/ella/usted) venga
(nosotros/as) vengamos
(vosotros/as) vengáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vengán

IMPERFECT

(yo) venía
(tú) venías
(él/ella/usted) venía
(nosotros/as) veníamos
(vosotros/as) veníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) venían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) vendría
(tú) vendrías
(él/ella/usted) vendría
(nosotros/as) vendríamos
(vosotros/as) vendrías
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vendrían

PAST PARTICIPLE

venido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Vengo andando desde la playa. I've walked all the way from the beach.

¿**Vendrás** conmigo al cine? Will you come to see a film with me?

Prefiero que no venga. I'd rather he didn't come.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **ver** (to see)

PRESENT

(yo) veo
(tú) ves
(él/ella/usted) ve
(nosotros/as) vemos
(vosotros/as) veis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) ven

PRETERITE

(yo) vi
(tú) viste
(él/ella/usted) vio
(nosotros/as) vimos
(vosotros/as) visteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vieron

FUTURE

(yo) veré
(tú) verás
(él/ella/usted) verá
(nosotros/as) veremos
(vosotros/as) veréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) verán

IMPERATIVE

ve/ ved

GERUND

viendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) vea
(tú) veas
(él/ella/usted) vea
(nosotros/as) veamos
(vosotros/as) veáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vean

IMPERFECT

(yo) veía
(tú) veías
(él/ella/usted) veía
(nosotros/as) veíamos
(vosotros/as) veíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) veían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) vería
(tú) verías
(él/ella/usted) vería
(nosotros/as) veríamos
(vosotros/as) veríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) verían

PAST PARTICIPLE

visto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*No **veo** muy bien.* I can't see very well.

*Los **veía** a todos desde la ventana.* I could see them all from the window.

*¿**Viste** lo que pasó?* Did you see what happened?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ **vivir** (to live)

PRESENT

(yo) vivo
(tú) vives
(él/ella/usted) vive
(nosotros/as) vivimos
(vosotros/as) vivís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) viven

PRETERITE

(yo) viví
(tú) viviste
(él/ella/usted) vivió
(nosotros/as) vivimos
(vosotros/as) vivisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vivieron

FUTURE

(yo) viviré
(tú) vivirás
(él/ella/usted) vivirá
(nosotros/as) viviremos
(vosotros/as) viviréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vivirán

IMPERATIVE

vive / vivid

GERUND

viviendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) viva
(tú) vivas
(él/ella/usted) viva
(nosotros/as) vivamos
(vosotros/as) viváis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vivan

IMPERFECT

(yo) vivía
(tú) vivías
(él/ella/usted) vivía
(nosotros/as) vivíamos
(vosotros/as) vivíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vivían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) viviría
(tú) vivirías
(él/ella/usted) viviría
(nosotros/as) viviríamos
(vosotros/as) viviríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vivirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

vivido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

Vivo en Valencia. I live in Valencia.

Vivieron juntos dos años. They lived together for two years.

Hemos vivido momentos difíciles. We've had some difficult times.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► volcar (to overturn)

PRESENT

(yo) vuelco
(tú) vuelcas
(él/ella/usted) vuelca
(nosotros/as) volcamos
(vosotros/as) volcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vuelcan

PRETERITE

(yo) volqué
(tú) volcaste
(él/ella/usted) volcó
(nosotros/as) volcamos
(vosotros/as) volcasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volcaron

FUTURE

(yo) volcaré
(tú) volcarás
(él/ella/usted) volcará
(nosotros/as) volcaremos
(vosotros/as) volcaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volcarán

IMPERATIVE

vuelca /volcad

GERUND

volcando

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) vuelque
(tú) vuelques
(él/ella/usted) vuelque
(nosotros/as) volquemos
(vosotros/as) volquéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vuelquen

IMPERFECT

(yo) volcaba
(tú) volcabas
(él/ella/usted) volcaba
(nosotros/as) volcábamos
(vosotros/as) volcabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volcaban

CONDITIONAL

(yo) volcaría
(tú) volcarías
(él/ella/usted) volcaría
(nosotros/as) volcaríamos
(vosotros/as) volcaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volcarían

PAST PARTICIPLE

volcado

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*El camión **volcó**.* The lorry overturned.

***Volcó** la basura en el suelo.* He emptied the rubbish out on the floor.

*Ten cuidado no lo **vuelques**.* Careful not to knock it over.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ volver (to return)

PRESENT

(yo) vuelvo
(tú) vuelves
(él/ella/usted) vuelve
(nosotros/as) volvemos
(vosotros/as) volvéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vuelven

PRETERITE

(yo) volví
(tú) volviste
(él/ella/usted) volvió
(nosotros/as) volvimos
(vosotros/as) volvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volvieron

FUTURE

(yo) volveré
(tú) volverás
(él/ella/usted) volverá
(nosotros/as) volveremos
(vosotros/as) volveréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volverán

IMPERATIVE

vuelve/ volved

GERUND

volviendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) vuelva
(tú) vuelvas
(él/ella/usted) vuelva
(nosotros/as) volvamos
(vosotros/as) volváis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) vuelvan

IMPERFECT

(yo) volvía
(tú) volvías
(él/ella/usted) volvía
(nosotros/as) volvíamos
(vosotros/as) volváis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volvían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) volvería
(tú) volverías
(él/ella/usted) volvería
(nosotros/as) volveríamos
(vosotros/as) volveríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) volverían

PAST PARTICIPLE

vuelto

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Mi padre **vuelve** mañana.* My father's coming back tomorrow.

*No **vuelvas** por aquí.* Don't come back here.

*Ha **vuelto** a casa.* He's gone back home.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► zurcir (to darn)

PRESENT

(yo) zurzo
(tú) zurces
(él/ella/usted) zurce
(nosotros/as) zurcimos
(vosotros/as) zurcís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) zurcen

PRETERITE

(yo) zurcí
(tú) zurciste
(él/ella/usted) zurció
(nosotros/as) zurcimos
(vosotros/as) zurcisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) zurcieron

FUTURE

(yo) zurciré
(tú) zurcirás
(él/ella/usted) zurcirá
(nosotros/as) zurciremos
(vosotros/as) zurciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) zurcirán

IMPERATIVE

zurce / zurcid

GERUND

zurciendo

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo) zurza
(tú) zurzas
(él/ella/usted) zurza
(nosotros/as) zurzamos
(vosotros/as) zurzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) zurzan

IMPERFECT

(yo) zurcía
(tú) zurcías
(él/ella/usted) zurcía
(nosotros/as) zurcíamos
(vosotros/as) zurcíaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) zurcían

CONDITIONAL

(yo) zurciría
(tú) zurcirías
(él/ella/usted) zurciría
(nosotros/as) zurciríamos
(vosotros/as) zurciríaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) zurcirían

PAST PARTICIPLE

zurcido

EXAMPLE PHRASES

*¿Quién le **zurce** las camisas?* Who darns his shirts?

*¡Que te **zurzan**!* Get lost!

*Se pasa el día **zurciéndole** la ropa.* She spends her day
darning his clothes.

**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often
in Spanish.**

HOW TO USE THE VERB INDEX

The verbs in bold are the model verbs which you will find in the Verb Tables. All the other verbs follow one of these patterns, so the number next to each verb indicates which pattern fits this particular verb. For example, **acampar** (*to camp*) follows the same pattern as **hablar** (number 39 in the Verb Tables).

All the verbs are in alphabetical order.

Superior numbers (1 etc) refer you to notes on page 91. These notes explain any differences between verbs and their model.

abandonar	39
abastecer	20
abolir	2
abollar	39
abombar	39
abonar	39
abortar	39
abrasar	39
abrazar	21
abrigar	53
abrir	3
abrochar	39
absorber	16
abstenerse	74

abultar	39
aburrir	81
abusar	39
acabar	39
acampar	39
acariciar	39
acatarrarse	39
acceder	16
acelerar	39
acentuar	4
aceptar	39
acercar	68
acertar	55
aclarar	39
acobardarse	39
acoger	15
acompañar	39
aconsejar	39
acordar	19
acostar	19
acostumbrar	39
actuar	4
acudir	81

acurrucarse	39
acusar	39
adaptar	39
adecuar	39
adelantar	39
adelgazar	21
adivinar	39
admirar	39
admitir	81
adoptar	39
adorar	39
adornar	39
adquirir	5
advertir	72
afectar	39
afeitar	39
aficionar	39
afilar	39
afiliarse	39
afinar	39
afirmar	39
aflojar	39
afrontar	39

agachar	39
agarrar	39
agitar	39
aglomerarse	39
agobiar	39
agotar	39
agradar	39
agradecer	20
agrupar	39
aguantar	39
ahogar	53
ahorcar	68
ahorrar	39
ajustar	39
alabar	39
alardear	39
alargar	53
alcanzar	21
alegrar	39
alejar	39
aliarse	31
aligerar	39
alimentar	39

aliviar	39
almacenar	39
almorzar	6
alojar	39
alquilar	39
alterar	39
alternar	39
alucinar	39
aludir	81
alzar	21
amamantar	39
amanecer ¹	20
amar	39
amargar	53
amarrar	39
amenazar	21
amontonar	39
amortiguar	10
ampliar	31
amputar	39
amueblar	39
analizar	21
andar	7

animar	39
anochece ¹	20
anotar	39
anticipar	39
antojarse	39
anular	39
anunciar	39
añadir	81
apagar	53
apañar	39
aparcar	68
aparecer	20
aparentar	39
apartar	39
apasionarse	39
apearse	39
apellidar	39
apestar	39
apetecer	20
aplastar	39
aplaudir	81
aplazar	21
aplicar	68

apoderarse	39
aportar	39
apostar	19
apoyar	39
apreciar	39
aprender	16
apresurarse	39
apretar	55
aprobar	19
aprovechar	39
aproximar	39
apuntar	39
apuñalar	39
apurar	39
arañar	39
arar	39
archivar	39
arder	16
armar	39
arrancar	68
arrasar	39
arrastrar	39
arrebatarse	39

arreglar	39
arrepentirse	72
arrestar	39
arriesgar	53
arrimar	39
arrodillarse	39
arrojar	39
arropar	39
arrugar	53
arruinar	39
asaltar	39
asar	39
ascender	30
asegurar	39
asesinar	39
asfixiar	39
asimilar	39
asistir	81
asociar	39
asolear	39
asomar	39
asombrar	39
asumir	81

asustar	39
atacar	68
atar	39
atardecer ¹	20
atender	30
aterrizar	21
atiborrar	39
atracar	68
atraer	76
atrapar	39
atravesar	55
atreverse	16
atropellar	39
aumentar	39
aunar	8
autorizar	21
avanzar	21
aventajar	39
aventar	55
avergonzar	9
averiarse	31
averiguar	10
avisar	39

ayudar	39
azotar	39
bailar	39
bajar	39
bañar	39
barnizar	21
barrer	16
basar	39
bastar	39
batir	81
beber	16
bendecir	11
beneficiar	39
besar	39
bloquear	39
bombardear	39
bordar	39
borrar	39
bostezar	21
botar	39
brillar	39
brincar	68
brindar	39

bromear	39
brotar	39
bucear	39
burlar	39
buscar	68
caber	12
caducar	68
caer	13
calar	39
calcar	68
calcular	39
calentar	55
calificar	68
callar	39
calmar	39
cambiar	39
caminar	39
cancelar	39
cansar	39
cantar	39
capacitar	39
capturar	39
cargar	53

casar	39
cascar	68
castigar	53
causar	39
cavar	39
cazar	21
ceder	16
celebrar	39
cenar	39
cepillar	39
cerrar	55
chapotear	39
charlar	39
chillar	39
chirriar	31
chocar	68
chupar	39
circular	39
citar	39
clasificar	68
clavar	39
cobrar	39
cocer	14

cocinar	39
coger	15
coincidir	81
cojear	39
colaborar	39
colar	19
coleccionar	39
colgar	65
colocar	68
colonizar	21
combinar	39
comentar	39
comenzar	29
comer	16
compadecer	20
comparar	39
compartir	81
compensar	39
competir	54
complacer	49
completar	39
complicar	68
componer	57

comportarse	39
comprar	39
comprender	16
comprobar	19
comprometer	16
comunicar	68
concebir	54
concentrar	39
concertar	55
condenar	39
conducir	17
conectar	39
confesar	55
confiar	31
confirmar	39
conformar	39
confundir	81
congelar	39
conmemorar	39
conmover	48
conocer	20
conquistar	39
conseguir	71

consentir	72
conservar	39
considerar	39
consistir	81
consolar	19
constar	39
construir	18
consultar	39
consumar	39
consumir	81
contagiar	39
contaminar	39
contar	19
contener	74
contentar	39
contestar	39
continuar	4
contradecir	24
contraer	76
contrastar	39
contratar	39
contribuir	18
controlar	39

convencer	20
convenir	79
conversar	39
convertir	72
convocar	68
cooperar	39
copiar	39
corregir	28
correr	16
corresponder	16
cortar	39
cosechar	39
coser	16
costar	19
crear	39
crecer	20
creer	44
criar	31
criticar	68
crujir	81
cruzar	21
cuadrar	39
cuajar	39

cubrir	22
cuchichear	39
cuidar	39
cultivar	39
cumplir	81
curar	39
dañar	39
dar	23
debatir	81
deber	16
debilitar	39
decepcionar	39
decidir	81
decir	24
declarar	39
decorar	39
dedicar	68
deducir	17
defender	30
definir	81
deformar	39
defraudar	39
dejar	39

delatar	39
deletrear	39
demostrar	19
denunciar	39
depender	16
deprimir	81
derramar	39
derretir	54
derribar	39
derrotar	39
derrumbar	39
desabrochar	39
desacertar	55
desafiar	31
desafinar	39
desahogar	53
desalojar	39
desanimar	39
desaparecer	20
desaprovechar	39
desarrollar	39
desatar	39
desayunar	39

descalzar	21
descansar	39
descargar	53
descender	30
descolgar	65
desconcertar	55
desconectar	39
desconfiar	31
descontar	19
descoser	16
describir	34
descubrir	22
descuidar	39
desdoblar	39
desear	39
desembarcar	68
desembocar	68
desempeñar	39
desengañar	39
desenredar	39
desenvolver	83
desesperar	39
desfilear	39

desgastar	39
deshacer	40
deshinchar	39
desilusionar	39
desinfectar	39
desinflar	39
deslizar	21
deslumbrar	39
desmayar	39
desmontar	39
desnudar	39
desobedecer	20
desorientar	39
despachar	39
despedir	54
despegar	53
despejar	39
desperezarse	21
despertar	55
despistar	39
desplegar	50
despreciar	39
desprender	16

despreocuparse	39
destacar	68
destapar	39
desteñir	62
destinar	39
destornillar	39
destrozar	21
destruir	18
desvelar	39
desviar	31
detener	74
deteriorar	39
determinar	39
detestar	39
devolver	83
devorar	39
dibujar	39
diferenciar	39
dificultar	39
digerir	72
diluir	18
dimitir	81
dirigir	25

disculpar	39
discutir	81
diseñar	39
disfrazar	21
disfrutar	39
disgustar	39
disimular	39
disminuir	18
disolver	63
disparar	39
disponer	57
disputar	39
distinguir	26
distraer	76
distribuir	18
disuadir	81
divertir	72
dividir	81
divorciarse	39
divulgar	53
doblar	39
doler	48
dominar	39

dormir	27
drogar	53
ducharse	39
durar	39
echar	39
editar	39
educar	68
efectuar	4
ejectuar	39
ejercer	78
elaborar	39
elegir	28
elevar	39
eliminar	39
elogiar	39
embalar	39
embarcar	68
emborrachar	39
embrollar	39
emigrar	39
emitir	81
emocionar	39
empalmar	39

empañar	39
empapar	39
empapelar	39
empaquetar	39
empastar	39
empatar	39
empeñar	39
empeorar	39
empezar	29
emplear	39
empujar	39
enamorar	39
encabezar	21
encajar	39
encantar	39
encarcelar	39
encargar	53
encender	30
encerrar	55
encoger	15
encontrar	19
enchufar	39
enderezar	21

endulzar	21
endurecer	20
enemistar	39
enfadar	39
enfermar	39
enfocar	68
enfrentar	39
enfriar	31
enganchar	39
engañar	39
engordar	39
enlazar	21
enloquecer	20
enmascarar	39
enojar	39
enorgullecerse	20
enredar	39
enriquecer	20
enrollar	39
enroscar	68
ensanchar	39
ensayar	39
enseñar	39

ensuciar	39
entender	30
enterarse	39
enterrar	55
entrar	39
entregar	53
entrenarse	39
entretener	74
entrevistar	39
entrometerse	16
entusiasmar	39
enumerar	39
envejecer	20
enviar	31
envidiar	39
envolver	83
equivaler	77
equivocarse	68
erguir	32
erigir	25
errar	33
eructar	39
escabullirse	37

escalar	39
escandalizar	21
escapar	39
escarbar	39
escocer	14
escoger	15
esconder	16
escribir	34
escuchar	39
escupir	81
escurrir	81
esforzarse	6
esfumarse	39
esmerarse	39
espabilar	39
esperar	39
espiar	31
espirar	39
esquiar	31
esquivar	39
establecer	20
estacionar	39
estafar	39

estallar	39
estar	35
estimular	39
estirar	39
estorbar	39
estornudar	39
estrangular	39
estrechar	39
estrellar	39
estrenar	39
estropear	39
estrujar	39
estudiar	39
evacuar	39
evadir	81
evaluar	4
evaporar	39
evitar	39
evolucionar	39
exagerar	39
examinar	39
exceder	16
exceptuar	4

excitar	39
exclamar	39
excluir	18
exhibir	81
exigir	25
existir	81
experimentar	39
explicar	68
explorar	39
explotar	39
exponer	57
exportar	39
expresar	39
exprimir	81
expulsar	39
extender	30
extinguir	26
extraer	76
extrañar	39
extraviar	31
fabricar	68
facilitar	39
facturar	39

fallar	39
fallecer	20
falsificar	68
faltar	39
fastidiar	39
favorecer	20
felicitar	39
festejar	39
fiar	31
fichar	39
figurar	39
fijar	39
filmar	39
filtrar	39
financiar	39
fingir	25
firmar	39
fisgar	53
flotar	39
fluctuar	4
fluir	18
fomentar	39
formar	39

forrar	39
forzar	6
fotocopiar	39
fracasar	39
fregar	50
freír	36
frenar	39
frotar	39
fruncir	84
fugarse	39
fumar	39
funcionar	39
fundamentar	39
fundar	39
fundir	81
galopar	39
ganar	39
garantizar	21
gastar	39
generalizar	21
generar	39
girar	39
gobernar	55

golpear	39
gotear	39
gozar	21
grabar	39
graduar	4
granizar ¹	21
gritar	39
gruñir	37
guardar	39
guiar	31
guiñar	39
guisar	39
gustar	39
haber	38
habitar	39
habituarse	4
hablar	39
hacer	40
halagar	53
hallar	39
hartar	39
hay	41
helar ¹	55

heredar	39
herir	72
hervir	72
hinchar	39
hojear	39
hospedar	39
huir	18
hundir	81
hurgar	53
idear	39
identificar	68
ignorar	39
iluminar	39
imaginar	39
imitar	39
impedir	54
imponer	57
importar	39
impresionar	39
imprimir	81
improvisar	39
impulsar	39
inaugurar	39

incendiar	39
inclinarse	39
incluir	18
incorporar	39
increpar	39
indemnizar	21
indicar	68
indignarse	39
inflar	39
influir	39
influir	18
informar	39
ingeniar	39
ingresar	39
inscribir	34
insinuar	4
insistir	81
insolarse	39
instalar	39
insultar	39
intentar	39
interesar	39
interpretar	39

interrogar	53
interrumpir	81
intervenir	79
introducir	17
inundar	39
invadir	81
inventar	39
invertir	72
invitar	39
inyectar	39
ir	42
irritar	39
izar	21
jalar	39
jubilar	39
jugar	43
juntar	39
jurar	39
justificar	68
juzgar	53
ladrar	39
lamentar	39
lamer	16

lanzar	21
latir	81
lavar	39
leer	44
levantar	39
liar	31
liberar	39
librar	39
ligar	53
limitar	39
limpiar	39
llamar	39
llegar	53
llenar	39
llevar	39
llorar	39
llover¹	45
localizar	21
lograr	39
lucir	46
luchar	39
machacar	68
madrugar	53

malgastar	39
maltratar	39
mamar	39
manchar	39
mandar	39
manejar	39
manifestar	55
manipular	39
mantener	74
maquillar	39
marcar	68
marchar	39
marear	39
masticar	68
medir	54
mejorar	39
mencionar	39
mentir	72
merendar	55
meter	16
mirar	39
mojar	39
moler	48

montar	39
morder	48
morir	47
mover	48
mudar	39
multiplicar	68
nacer	49
nadar	39
narrar	39
naturalizarse	21
navegar	53
necesitar	39
negar	50
negociar	39
nevar ¹	55
nombrar	39
notar	39
notificar	68
nublarse ¹	39
obedecer	20
obligar	53
obrar	39
observar	39

obsesionar	39
obstinarse	39
obtener	74
ocasionar	39
ocultar	39
ocupar	39
ocurrir	81
odiar	39
ofender	16
ofrecer	20
oír	51
oler	52
olvidar	39
omitir	81
ondear	39
operar	39
opinar	39
oponer	57
optar	39
ordenar	39
ordeñar	39
organizar	21
originar	39

orinar	39
osar	39
oscilar	39
oscurecer	20
oxidar	39
padecer	20
pagar	53
palpar	39
palpitar	39
parar	39
parecer	20
parpadear	39
participar	39
partir	81
pasar	39
pasear	39
pasmar	39
pastar	39
patear	39
patinar	39
patrocinar	39
pecar	68
pedalear	39

pedir	54
pegar	53
peinar	39
pelar	39
pelear	39
pellizcar	68
pender	16
penetrar	39
pensar	55
percatarse	39
perder	30
perdonar	39
perfeccionar	39
perforar	39
perjudicar	68
perjurar	39
permanecer	20
permitir	81
perseguir	71
persuadir	81
pertenecer	20
pesar	39
pescar	68

pestañear	39
piar	31
picar	68
pillar	39
pinchar	39
pintar	39
pisar	39
pitar	39
planchar	39
planear	39
planificar	68
plantar	39
plantear	39
platicar	68
plegar	50
poder	56
podrir	81
poner	57
portarse	39
posar	39
poseer	44
posponer	57
practicar	68

precipitar	39
precisar	39
predecir	24
predicar	68
preferir	72
preguntar	39
premiar	39
prender	16
preocupar	39
preparar	39
prescindir	81
presenciar	39
presentar	39
presionar	39
prestar	39
presumir	81
pretender	16
prevenir	79
prever	80
privar	39
probar	19
proclamar	39
procurar	39

producir	17
programar	39
progresar	39
prohibir	58
prolongar	53
prometer	16
pronosticar	68
pronunciar	39
propagar	53
proponer	57
proporcionar	39
prosperar	39
proteger	15
protestar	39
provocar	68
proyectar	39
publicar	68
podrir ²	81
pulir	81
pulsar	39
quebrar	55
quedar	39
quejarse	39

quemar	39
querer	59
quitar	39
rajar	39
rallar	39
rapar	39
raptar	39
rascar	68
rasgar	53
rasurarse	39
rayar	39
reaccionar	39
realizar	21
rebajar	39
rebelarse	39
rebotar	39
recalcar	68
recargar	53
rechazar	21
recibir	81
reciclar	39
recitar	39
reclamar	39

recoger	15
recomendar	55
reconciliar	39
reconocer	20
reconstruir	18
recordar	39
recorrer	16
recortar	39
recostar	19
recuperar	39
recurrir	81
redactar	39
reducir	17
reembolsar	39
reemplazar	21
referir	72
reflexionar	39
reformular	39
refrescar	68
refugiarse	39
regalar	39
regañar	39
regar	50

regatear	39
registrar	39
regresar	39
regular	39
rehacer	40
rehogar	53
rehusar	60
reincorporarse	39
reír	61
relacionar	39
relajar	39
relucir	45
rellenar	39
remar	39
remedar	39
remediar	39
remitir	81
remojar	39
remover	48
rendir	54
renovar	19
rentar	39
reñir	62

reparar	39
repartir	81
repasar	39
repetir	54
repostar	39
reprobar	19
reprochar	39
reproducir	17
resaltar	39
resbalar	39
rescatar	39
reservar	39
resfriarse	31
resistir	81
resolver	63
respaldar	39
respetar	39
respirar	39
responder	16
resquebrajar	39
restablecer	20
restar	39
restaurar	39

restegar	53
resultar	39
resumir	81
retar	39
retirar	39
retorcer	75
retransmitir	81
retrasar	39
retroceder	16
reunir	64
revelar	39
reventar	55
revisar	39
revolver	83
rezar	21
ridiculizar	21
rizar	21
robar	39
rociar	31
rodar	19
rodear	39
rogar	65
romper	66

roncar	68
ronronear	39
rozar	21
ruborizarse	21
rugir	25
saber	67
sacar	68
sacudir	81
salir	69
salpicar	68
saltar	39
saludar	39
salvar	39
sangrar	39
satisfacer	70
sazonar	39
secar	68
secuestrar	39
seguir	71
seleccionar	39
sembrar	55
sentar	55
sentir	72

señalar	39
separar	39
ser	73
serrar	55
servir	54
significar	68
silbar	39
sobrar	39
sobrevivir	81
soler ³	48
solicitar	39
soltar	19
solucionar	39
sonar	19
sonreír	61
soñar	19
soplar	39
soportar	39
sorber	16
sorprender	16
sospechar	39
sostener	74
soterrar	39

subir	81
subrayar	39
subvencionar	39
suceder	16
sudar	39
sufrir	81
sugerir	72
sujetar	39
sumar	39
suminstrar	39
superar	39
suplicar	68
suponer	57
suprimir	81
surgir	25
suspender	16
suspirar	39
sustituir	18
susurrar	39
tachar	39
taladrar	39
tallar	39
tambalearse	39

tantear	39
tapar	39
tapizar	21
tararear	39
tardar	39
tartamudear	39
tasar	39
tatuar	4
teclear	39
tejer	16
telefonar	39
televisar	39
temblar	55
temer	16
tender	30
tener	74
tensar	39
tentar	55
teñir	62
terciar	39
tergiversar	39
terminar	39
timar	39

tirar	39
tiritar	39
titubear	39
titularse	39
tocar	68
tolerar	39
tomar	39
topar	39
torcer	75
torear	39
torturar	39
toser	16
tostar	19
trabajar	39
traducir	17
traer	76
tragar	53
traicionar	39
tramitar	39
tranquilizar	21
transformar	39
transmitir	81
transportar	39

trasladar	39
trasnochar	39
traspasar	39
trasplantar	39
tratar	39
trazar	21
trépar	39
trillar	39
trinchar	39
triturar	39
triunfar	39
tronar ¹	19
tronchar	39
tropezar	29
trotar	39
tumbar	39
turnarse	39
tutear	39
unir	81
untar	39
usar	39
utilizar	21
vaciar	31

vacilar	39
vacunar	39
vagar	53
valer	77
valorar	39
variar	31
velar	39
vencer	78
vendar	39
vender	16
vengar	53
venir	79
ventilar	39
ver	80
veranear	39
verificar	68
verter	30
vestir	54
viajar	39
vibrar	39
viciar	39
vigilar	39
vindicar	68

violar	39
visitar	39
vitorear	39
vituperar	39
vivificar	68
vivir	81
volar	19
volcar	82
volver	83
vomitarse	39
votar	39
zambullirse	84
zampar	39
zanjar	39
zarpar	39
zumbar	39
zurcir	84
zurrar	39

NOTES

- 1) The verbs **amanecer, anochecer, atardecer, granizar, helar, llover, nevar, nublarse** and **tronar** are used almost exclusively in the infinitive and third person singular forms.
- 2) The **past participle** of the verb **podrir** is **podrido**.

3) The verb **soler** is used only in the **present** and **imperfect indicative**.

THE ALPHABET

- The Spanish alphabet is pronounced differently from the way it is pronounced in English. Use the list below to help you sound out the letters.

A, a	[a]	(ah)	like 'a' in 'la'
B, b	[be]	(bay)	
C, c	[θe]	(thay)	
Ch, ch	[tʃe]	(chay)	
D, d	[de]	(day)	
E, e	[e]	(ay)	
F, f	[ʼefe]	(efay)	
G, g	[xe]	(chay)	like 'ch' in Scottish 'loch'
H, h	[ʼatʃe]	(atshay)	
I, i	[i]	(ee)	
J, j	[ʼxota]	(chota)	like 'ch' in Scottish 'loch'
K, k	[ka]	(ka)	
L, l	[ʼele]	(elay)	
Li, ll	[ʼeːle]	(elyay)	
M, m	[ʼeme]	(emay)	
N, n	[ʼene]	(enay)	
Ñ, ñ	[ʼeɲe]	(enyay)	
O, o	[o]	(oh)	
P, p	[pe]	(pay)	
Q, q	[ku]	(koo)	
R, r	[ʼere]	(eray)	
Rr, rr	[ʼerre]	(erray)	
S, s	[ʼese]	(esay)	
T, t	[te]	(tay)	
U, u	[u]	(oo)	
V, v	[ʼuβe]	(oobay)	
W, w	[ʼuβeˈdoble]	(oobaydoblay)	
X, x	[ʼekis]	(ekees)	
Y, y	[iˈvrjeva]	(ee-griayga)	
Z, z	[ʼθeta]	(thayta)	